THE HUTH LIBRARY.

LIFE AND WORKS
OF
ROBERT GREENE, M.A.

VOL. XII.

ORPHARION.
GREENS GROATSWORTH OF WIT.
THE REPENTANCE OF ROBERT GREENE.
AND
GREENES VISION.

1592—1599.
Then gently scan your brother Man
   Still gentler sister Woman;
Tho' they may gang a kennin wrang,
   To step aside is human;
One point must still be greatly dark,
   The moving why they do it;
And just as lamely can ye mark,
   How far perhaps they rue it.

Who made the heart? 'tis He alone
   Decidedly can try us,
He knows each chord—its various tone,
   Each spring—its various bias:
Then at the balance let's be mute,
   We never can adjust it;
What's done we partly may compute,
   But know not what's resisted.

BURNS.
The Early Library

ELIZABETHAN-JACOBEAN

Unique or Very Rare

BOOKS

IN

VERSE AND PROSE

LARGELY

From the Library of

Henry Huth Esqr.

(Foreign by W.J. Adams from a Photograph.

Edited with Introductions, Notes and Illustrations, etc.

BY THE


FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY
The Huth Library.

THE LIFE AND COMPLETE WORKS IN PROSE AND VERSE OF ROBERT GREENE, M.A.
CAMBRIDGE AND OXFORD.

IN TWELVE VOLUMES.

FOR THE FIRST TIME COLLECTED AND EDITED WITH NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS, ETC.,

BY THE REV.
ALEXANDER B. GROSART, LL.D. (Edin.), F.S.A.,
St. George's, Blackburn, Lancashire.

VOL. XII.—PROSE.
ORPHARION.
GREENS GROATSWORTH OF WIT.
THE REPENTANCE OF ROBERT GREENE.
AND
GREENES VISION.
1592—1599.

PRINTED FOR PRIVATE CIRCULATION ONLY.
1881—83.

50 Copies.
## CONTENTS

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Title</th>
<th>Page</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Orpharion</td>
<td>1</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greens Groats-worth of Wit</td>
<td>95</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>The Repentance of Robert Greene</td>
<td>151</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Greenes Vision</td>
<td>189</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Notes and Illustrations, etc.</td>
<td>285</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
When ane Life's day draws near the gloamin',
Then farewell vacant careless roamin';
An' farewell cheerfu' tankards foamin',
An' social noise;
An' farewell dear deluding woman,
The joy of joys.

O life! how pleasant in thy morning,
Young Fancy's rays the hills adorning!
Cold-pausing Caution's lesson scorning,
We frisk away,
Like school-boys, at the expected warning,
To joy and play.

We wander there, we wander here,
We eye the rose upon the brier,
Unmindful that the thorn is near,
Among the leaves;
And tho' the puny wound appear,
Short while it grieves.

Some, lucky, find a flow'ry spat,
For which they never toil'd nor swat;
They drink the sweet and eat the fat,
But care or pain;
And haply, eye the barren hut,
With high disdain.

With steady aim, some Fortune chase;
Keen Hope does ev'ry sinew brace;

Tho' fair, thro' foul, they urge the race,
And seize the prey;
Then canie, in some cozie place,
They close the day.

And others, like your humble servant,
Poor wrights, nae rules, nor roads observin',
To right or left eternal swervin',
They zig-zag on;
Till cursed with age, obscure, an' starvin',
They aften groan.

O ye dour folk, that live by rule,
Grave, tideless-blooded, calm, and cool,
Compar'd wi' you—O fool! fool! fool!
How much unlike!
Your hearts are just a standing pool,
Your lives a dyke!

Nae hair-brain'd sentimental traces,
In your unletter'd, nameless faces!
In arioso trills and graces
Ye never stray,
But gravissimo, solemn basses,
Ye hum away.

Ye are sae grave, nae doubt ye're wise;
Nae ferly, tho' ye do despise.
The harum-scarum, ram-stam boys,
The ratling squad.
NOTE

Though 'Orpharion' survives only in the edition of 1599 (our text from the Huth Library) it was licensed and almost certainly published in 1589. In the Epistle to 'Perimides' (1588) Greene announced 'Orpharion' as ready for the press. See annotated Life in Vol. I.—G.
Greenes Orpharion.

Wherin is discouerred a musiqueall concorde of pleasant Histories, many sweet moods graced with such harmonious discords, as agreeing in a delightfull cloffe, they found both pleasure and profit to the eare.

Heerein also as in a Diateheron, the branches of Vertue, ascending and descending by degrees: are counited in the glorious praise of women-kind.

With divers Tragical and Comical Histories presented by Orpheus and Arion, beeing as full of profit as of pleasure.

Omne tulit punctum, qui miscit utile dulci.

Robertus Greene, in Artibus Magister.
To the Right Worshipfull Maister Robert
Carey Esquire, Robert Greene wiseth encrease
of all honorable vertues.

(*)

Nius (Right Worshipful) had a Mæcenas, though his verses were rude, & Hippocrates durst present his pictures, though they were rough. The blindeft Bayard hath a reason to shadow his presumption: for sayth hee, will is aboue skill. Soothing my selfe (right Worshipfull) with their humours, having attempted to frame out ORPHARION, to harsh to make a concord in any cunning eare: yet with old Ennius doating in my youth as he did in his age: I doe presume to present my rurall Instrument vnder the shadow of your patronage, and the rather for that as the poore Cobler durst prefer his chattering Pye to Augustus, for that the Emperour was affable / and curteous, so hearing your Worship to be indued with such honourable vertues and plausible qualities, as drawes men to admire and loue such
vnited perfection: I embolden my selfe to trust
upon your Worships curteous acceptance, which
if it be such as others haue founde and I hoped
for, & that any way this Orpharion may agree
with the dainties of your touch and fingering,
the end of my labours and the summe of my
desires comfort in one sympathie, and in that hope,
I commit your Worship to the Almighty.

Your Worships humbly
to command,

Ro. Greene.
To the Gentlemen Readers Health.

Gentlemen, I haue long promised my Orpharion, and because I would not frustrate your expectation: at laft it is leapt into the Stacioners Shoppe, but not from my Study, for then might you thinke I had sweld with the mountaines, and brought foorth a Mouce, but the Printer had it long since: marry whether his presfe were out of tune, Paper deere, or some other secret delay driue it off, it hath line this twelue months in the fuds. Now at laft it is crept forth in the Spring, a flender bud and easily to be nipt with the leaft froft of Difdaine.

Therfor doo I entreate whatfoeuer melody my Orpharion yeeld: you would fauour the blossome with the Sunshine of your curteous acceptance, else shall you discourage a Gardener for grafting any more, and therefore hoping to finde you as euer I haue done, farwell.

Rob. Greene.
Vpid hauing taught me what restleffe passions are in loue, what continual perturbations Fancy afforded to such as account beauty the principal end of their affects:

hauing receaued the wound, I fought where to find a fauie fit for the easing of my malady:
Experience willing that I shoule not tye my thoughts on delay, told me that such as were enuenomed with the Scorpion, muft be healed by the Scorpion, that the Tarantals fting could not be pulde out without Musick, that he which was pierced with Achilles Launce muft be healed by his Speare, and they which were charmed with Loue, muft feeke to loue, or els lacke remedy:
Wherupon doubtfull what I shoule doo, I was willed to fue to Venus as foueraigne Goddesse and patronesse of such perplexed patients. I left
my home and sayled to Cipres: there found I men vnknowne, but not her whom I lookt for: there might I see Venus Pallace like the gorgious Tower built by Semeramus. Sloth being Porter, sleepy, and suffering free passage to all, the gate of entrance was not the way to returne: for at the other side was a doore to depart, where Beggery floode and threatened all, but strooke some with his whip of repentance: within I found Princes, great Lords and men of meane calling, al prisoners: some fettered by the eyes, others by the eares, some by the tong, as hauing more luft in their mouth then loue in their mindes, none or fewe cheyned by the harts, and such as were set in-throned in a secret Cell: those Venus shrinde vp as wonders of the worlde: well, missing what I came for, I paft speedily from thence to Paphos, where Venus had onely a Temple: thither came multitudes on Pilgrimage, making vowes, uttering oathes, and protefting promifes: if they might enjoy the fruition of their Ladyes, to be sworne votaries to the Goddeffe: Some were favoured, others disgraced: some dispaired, some hoped, but all found the ende of theyr pilgrimage was to buy smoake with many perrills and daungers: But all these instances were no arguments to diswade me from my iourney: But as Medea though I faw the beft and allowed of it, yet I
followed the neereft & smarted for it: for such as be in loue are like the Deere, which one while strike at the Tamarisk tree with their hornes, and then greedily burst on it with their mouthes, others [like] the people of Mamaca, that surfeet on Dates, and yet dye with them in their mawes. Louers exclaime agaynst Cupid, and yet they goe on pylgrimage to Paphos, they call Venus vniuft, and yet offer her incense and sacrifice, they fore-fee misery, and yet run headlong on their owne misfortune. So fared it with mee, for seeing these men thus deeply passionate, and yet so slenderly rewarded, as who carried away the greatest trophe, had his enseigne stamped with repentance: yet their mishaps could not make me learne to beware, but from Paphos I went to the fountaine of Alcidalion, where I heard Venus to auoyde the heate of Sommer, was kept close Prisioner by Mars in a Pauillion, but I founde the rumour false, yet did I not repent mee of my arriuall, for there I fawe sitting about the bancks, infinite troupes of faire and beautifull Ladyes, all votaries vnto Venus, smyling at the fondnesse of men, and laughing at the passions of theyr Louers, making true loue knots of rufhes, that broke ere they could be twifled: some seemed lyke Saintes, thofe were subtil and peruerfe: others fawned, and thofe were flatterers: some wept, and they let fall teares of deceite: some seemde
to have many eyes, and those had many fancies: some two harts, and yet they were very chaft: for some had twenty meafuring their Loues by their lookes: gazing still vpon their countenance and gesture, I perceiued hard by separate from the rest a few Ladyes sitting passing solitarie: their names were ingrauen in the trees, but so long since as hardly I could read them, yet I found out Hero, Penelope, Thife, Artemifia: alas a small number and disdained by the rest: these had their eyes shut against beauty, and their eares open to vertue, their harts subieéct to loue, but onely stamped with one Carraéter, resembiling the Emeraulde, that never looseth the first impression nor admitteth any other: well here I could neyther finde Venus, nor heare of her, but scoffinglie those girles told me, she was either in Ida or Ereclus: desirous to loose no time, I hafted from Alcydalion to Ida, where I could see no steps of a Goddesse, but only the ancient monument of Troy consumed to cinders: there I noted the end of loue, the reward of luft, the trophes of Venus, the follies of women in Helena, that brought Priamus his sonnes, and so famous a Cittie to confusion. From thence I posted to Ereclus: the Mountaine was green and pleafant to the eye, the stones that appeared higher then the grasse seemed like Jacinthes, the mossi was flowers, the very rubbish below pearles,
so it nature seemd to haue conquered art, and art
nature, and a supernaturall glory both: in musing
at the gorgeous scituation of this deuine Mount,
looking if eyther there were Palace or Temple
dedicate to Venus, I sawe none, but casting mine
eye into the bording vale, I saw a Shepheard
grasing of his flockes. Desirous to learne of the
man any newes of the Goddesse, pacing downe
from the Hyll, I went and saluted him in this
manner.

Shepheard, so I name thee for thy flockes, more
maist thou be, for Apollo kept Midas sheepe, and
Mercury [has] taken the shape of a Heardman:
but measuring thy degree as present thou seemest,
I craue so much fauour at thy hands, as to tell
mee whether Venus is resident about this mount of
Erecinus, or no: I haue beene at all her places of
abode, and this is the last of all her earthly man-
tions:/ This Shephearde hearing me salute him
so curteouslie, laying downe his pipe and his
hooke, aunswered thus bluntly.

Friend, what I am it little reckes thee, thou
feest my fouldes, and then why standest thou vpon
higher titles: In calling me shepheard or Swaine,
thou giuest me my due: if my degree be greater,
my sheepe may serue for thy excuse: to thy questio,
as it fauours of folly, so I thinke best to aunswer it
with silence, yet for I see thy thoughts to be full
of passions, and thy face the map of sorrowes, 
the two notes of a Louer, if I knew my counfaile 
might profite thee, or my experience warne thee, 
I would bestow a little waft time while my Sheepe 
grase so hard, to holde thee chat. 

Hearing the Shepheard beginning so roughly, 
to conclude so gently, willing to be auditor to his 
Country precepts, I aunswered him thus. 

Shepheard, if thou be no better, (for thy talke 
makes me suspect higher,) know that I haue tolde 
many cares, numbred many passions, felt many 
sorrowes, vttred many sighes, shed many teares since 
Venus entertained me, with Rofes at the firft, & 
afterwarde beate me with Nettles: I haue found 
loue to be a Labarinth, a fury, a hell, wherein 
men aliue feele worse paines then thofe ghoftes 
that pay Charon hier for his ferri-boat: greeued 
thus, yet as one in a lunacie, I neuer fore-fawe 
my-miferies. I heard many counfailes, and read 
many precepts, but al in vaine, yet for hat ttime 
hath many chaunces, the Fates their Canons tied 
to opportunitie: Fortune her decrees variable, and 
loue, many accidents: I will humbly craue what 
 thou haft offered, promising to be attentiue and 
not vngratefull, as farre as a strangers abilitie may 
gratifie. The Shepheard without further pro-
isfing or longer delay, began thus. 

Thou feelt that I fitte heere feeding my flocks
by *Erecinus*, whether daily resorte multitudes of amorous Pilgrims suing to *Venus* for releefe of their passions, but how she vfed these fond and perplexed patients, as it pitties mee to rehearse, so it wil grieue thee to heare. Those youthes whose yeeres more then their mindes, are fryed with a small flame of ordinarie fancie, rather inferred by nature then inferred by loue, such she entertaineth most sumptuously, as fitteft obiects for her to worke vpon, putting oyle in the flame, fire to flax, and beautie as the balesfull obiect to youth: for she knowing the olde verse to bee too true for her to disproue, *Quod latit ignotum est: ignoti nulla Cupido*, that what is secret from vs we neuer desire: to inueagle them with her charmes, she present[s] beautie excellent by nature, yet far more gorgious by arte: faire faces, smilling lookes, alluring gestures, sweet speeches, these are the baitez that she layes to intrap, & youth is so fond that he cannot but taste, resembling the poore Mouse that feedeth soone on the most infectious Rosalger, respecting the colour not the confection: after once shee hath gotten youth limed faft on her twigges, then *Cupid* vseth them as marks, and at euery shoote galleth to the quicke, that the woundes cannot be cured, till eyther we finde remedie by repentance, which oft cometh too late, or haue a quittance by death, which they thinke commeth too soone.
Others, that have beene stale stayers in her Court, spending their time in sighes, teares, and many dispayring passions, such shee feedeth on with delayes, giuing the one day an incarnatiue to heale, and the next day, a contrary medicine to fester, choking theyr fences with perfumes, and straight stifling them with Hemlock, sufferring theyr Ladies in the morning to wash their temples with Rose-water, and at night to quaffe to them gall and vinegar, shadowing smiles with frownes, fower looks with wanton actions, fettering them with the wings of hope, but hanging despair at their heeles, leaft soaring too hie, they should seize & catch their pray: sup / poe she sets the on the top of her wheele, where, poore man I know thou desirest to be plaste, and for their long trauell, she giues them with Ixion a clowdde, a faire dame I mean, as shee bestowed vpon Paris, yet shalt thou finde, that she fetcheth all her virgins from the fountain of Alcydalion, (beleeue me Pilgrim I will not warrant theyr maidenheads) because thou feest they haue many eyes, and many harts, which haue many fancies, and many loues /: and trust me Pilgrime, many causes muft needes bring out some effects: But leauing these doubts as may not once haue entrance into Louers thoughts, and affirming that all are virgins that come from Venus, for Diana hath so few in her traine, that
she marries not one in seauen yeeres, whē the louer
hath what he long sought for, he findes not the
fairest Christall but hath his staine, the brightest
topaz but hath his spot, the richest Gold, but hath
his ore, and the purest creature, feminine I meane,
but hath her common imperfection, either proud
without profite, and thats a purgation for the
Purse, or fayre without wit, and that is to marry
a woodden picture with a golden creafe, full of
favour but flattering, and so he may reappe many
kisses and little loue, shrewifh, deceitfull, wiffull,
fond, new fangle, and what not: nay, perhaps,
proue so light in the braines, that she makes him
fwell in the browes, that as he hath beene in his
youth a votary to Venus, so in his age he may
proue a companion to Vulcan: and Pilgrim quoth
the Shepheard, this is to fitte on the toppe of
Venus wheele, these bitter sauces be her cheefest
delicates, and these painted Sepulchers her richest
trophies. Thou seeft I fit neere Erecinus, and
therefore speake by experience: thou faieft to
Venus thou art in loue, thou wouldest faine haue
a wife frō Alcidalion: looke before thou leape,
pry into Venus Cofers, and see what chaffer she
prouides for her chapmen: I haue counsayled,
now reft it in thee either to followe it with a
momentary sorrowing content, or to forfake it
with a perpetuall / pleasing mistake.

xii.
Hearing the cunning experienced swaine to discourse so roundly of the matter, I imagined either he had beene in loue, or an enemie to Venus, so that I demaunded of him if he would not have men loue at all?

Yes, quoth he, so they court Diana's virgins not Venus wantons: I replied she had very few or none: hee aunswered, had shee more suters, shee woulde prouide more maydes, but Venus spying them passe towards her Pallace, layeth such snares to intangle, such traps to intice, such charmes to bewitch, such dangers to prejudice, that none or very few ariue at Diana's mantion, and such as doo, come thither halfe maimed.

Then quoth I, you conclude peremptorily against Venus and her crue, and very hardly against women. Hearing me say so, he tooke me by the hande, & softly whispering in mine eare, Pilgrim I may say to thee, Wiuues be they neuer so watcht they will: Maides be they neuer so bashfull they wish, and widdowes bee they neuer so coy, they would: take me not generally Pilgrime quoth hee, and with that sitting downe he tooke his pipe in his hand, and plaid so sweetly, that like Argus at Mercury's melodie I fell on sleepe.

No sooner had Morpheus shut mine eyes, but I fell into a dreame: mee thought I was ledde from Erecinus by Mercury, alongst the galupin or siluer
paued way of heauen to the hie built house of Ioue: there woulde I haue gazde at the gorgious buildings, but my guide was in hafte, and conducted me into the great Hall, wher Jupiter and the rest of the Gods were at a banquet: no sooner was I entred amongst them, but Mercury sprinkled me with water, which made me capaple of their diuine presence, so I sat stil, looking on their persons, and listning to their parle: at laft me thought blunt Vulcan that sat at ye lower end of the boord, although Venus aboue, fat opposite to Mars, beganne thus roughly to breake silence: I cannot migh/ty Gods but smile to thinke that when my wife and her blind Sonne, the one with her boxe of beauties, the other with his quiuer of Arrowes, passe abroade to shewe their Deities: what number of poore perplexed men as Patients come to haue cure of their hurts: some in their eyes, that haue gazed with the Phylosopher agaynft too bright a Sunne, and such are blind: some that with Vlifes haue not stopped their eares, but haue listened the Syrens, and they complaine of their hearing: some in their harts, and those bewraies their passions by their grones: none comes without greefe, nor returne throughly cured, so that I suppose either the wounds are very perilous, or my wife a bad Surgeon. Truth (quoth Jupiter) but what number of women come hether? Multitudes (quoth Vulcan).
Apollo smoothly and yet with a smile, demanded if they were as bad to cure as men: No (quoth Vulcan) for be the wound neuer so deepe, tis perfectly cured in twelue houres: eyther my wife is more friendly to Women, or their fores more easie to salue. No (quoth Mercury) it is because their loues are like a mans breath against bright steele, which scarce lighteth on before it leapeth off, or like wood wet in Allom water, which lieth in the fire and waxeth hot, but neuer burneth: their harts resemble a Pumice stone, light: & which way foeuer you turne it, full of starting holes, that if fancy steale in at the one, he can step out at the other: or els quoth Jupiter, their harts haue no holes at all, but as firme as flint, that neither fancy nor loue can enter, for Venus teacheth them extremities, eyther to fawne & be too fond, or to be too coy and too stubborne, which caufeth so many to put vp inuectuies against her. Least of all (quoth the Goddesse) in a great chafe, hath Jupiter cause to accuse women of cruelty: if not, I appeale to Juno: at this all the company smiled and loue was silent: well (quoth Apollo) leauing these quips, seeing we haue met to be merry, if it pleafe you to allow of my motion, to make vs some musicke, I will raise vp the Ghosts of Orpheus and Arion, two, famous in their times for their instruments, and greatly experienced in Loue, as beeing
great trauailers, and with that conuersing [with] the greatest Potentates in the world, who often are as full of loues as they are of dignities: these shall please vs with harmony, and discourse either what they thinke, or what they haue heard of womens Loues: To this all the Gods gladly agreeede, and *Mercury* was sent in Post to *Pluto* for these two Musitians: scarce had I thought *Mercury* had beeene out of the Hall, before I saw enter with this winged God, the Ghosts of *Orpheus* and *Arion*, so lively to the eye, and so well trussed in their apparell, as they seemed perfectly such as they were when they liued vpon earth: *Orpheus* after that he had done due reverence to the Gods, especially to *Apollo*: tuning his instrument without any more commaund, as if his service should be flauery, hee daintily toucht the Cordes with a sweete stroake, and to a melodious tune, sung this Ditty.

*Orpheus* Song.

He that did sing the motions of the starres,
Pale colour'd Phæbus borrowing of her light:
Aspects of planets oft oppo'ed in iarres,
Of Hesper, Henchman to the day and night.

Sings now of Loue as taugh[t] by prooфе to sing:
Women are falsε and louε a bitter thing.

I lou'd Euridicε, the brightεst Lαffε,
More fond to like so faire a Nymph as she:
In Thesaly, so bright none euer was,
But faire and conſtant hardly may agree.
Falfe harted wife to him that loued thee well:
To leaue thy loue and choose the Prince of hell.

Theseus/did helpe, and I in haſt did hie,
To Pluto, for the Laffe I loued fo:
The God made graunt, and who fo glad as I?
I tunde my Harpe, and ſhee and I gan goe:
Glad that my loue was left to me alone,
I looked back, Euridice was gone.

She ſlipt aſide, backe to her lateſt loue,
Vnkinde, ſhee wrong’d her firſt and trueſt Feere:
Thus womens loues delights, as tryall proues,
By falfe Eurydyce I loued fo deere.
To change, and fleete, and euery way to ſhrinke,
To take in loue, and loſe it with a winke.

Scarfe had Orpheus ended his fong, but Jupiter
thinking not to let fo faire a ball fall to the grounde: tooke opportunitie thus by the hand.
This present Dittie of Orpheus tendeth to our forepaſsed discouſe, as though the Fates had fore-
pointed our talke, and this arriuall conſequence of
their infallible decrees: fith then the vnkindnes of
Euridice discouers the inconſtancie of women, &
that Orpheus hath by his sundry passions made an
Anatomy of loue: let vs heare his opinion howe
hee censures of beautie. *Apollo at Iupiters* motion commanded *Orpheus*, who not amased (as a Ghost come from hell) began thus. The Question right mighty Gods is easie, for that commonly all gaze at beauty as the fairest obiec\(t\) that flattereth the eye, yet a thing perilous, howsoever it seemes precious: seeing the fairest Lawnes soonest take the deepest staines, the brightest Beralles the greatest flawes, and oftentimes the fairest faces with intolerable faults: *Greece* vaunted not so much of her beautifuU paragon, as *Troy* lamented of their incestuous trumpet: men came to *Rome* to see *Messalines* beauty, but *Rome* sorrowed that shee was counted a Harlot: *Thessaly* rung of *Euridices* proportion, but / *Thessaly* shamed and *Orpheus* grieued at her bad condition, and yet forsooth though we find beauty thus prejudicial, yet we must leape at it, though to our utter ruine we light in the ditch: But as the fis\(h\) Ramera l\(i\)ftning to the found of the trumpet, is caught of the Fishers: as the Porcupine st\(a\)ndeth st\(a\)ring at the glimmering of the Starres, and is ouertaken with dogges: as the Leopard looking at the Panthers painted skinne, is caught as a pray: so he which taketh too much delight to gaze v\(p\)pon beautie, is oft times galled with greese and misery: yea, his pleasure shall inferre such profit, and his good will such gaines, as if hee reapt the beautifuU
Apples of Tantalus, which are no sooner toucht, but they turne to ashes. Beautie no sooner flourisheth but it fadeth, and it is not fully ripe, but it begineth to rotte: it no sooner blossometh, but it withereth: and scarcely being toucht, it stayneth like the Guiacum leafe, that hath the one halfe parched before the other halfe be perfect: to the Birde Acanthis, which hatched white, yet turneth blacke at the first storme: Or like to the stone Abites, that changeth coulour with the onely breath of man: this (right mightie Gods) is my censiture of beautie, that vnlesse ioyned with vertue, it is like the feathers of the Phenix, placed in the carkasse of a Crow: but where faith and feature are Relatiues, that beauty I call diuine and metaphistica[1], for because gratior est pulchro veniens è corpore virtus. Thys discours of Orpheus all the Gods applauded except Venus: Juno brookt it as having lost the Ball, and Venus thought it was best to pocket vp whatsoeuer a Ghost out of hell did tattle, and so I would haue all faire Gentlewomen to take it: well, so well did the Gods like and allow of his talke, that Jupiter questioned him what hee thought generally of women: Orpheus neither feareing Juno nor Venus, as one that could but goe to hell, boldly made answere, that their generall sex stood vpon two extreames, either too curteous or too cruell, and that he had made
experience of both: and which quoth Jupiter are the worst? I note (quoth Orpheus) if your question tendes towards men, because my particular instance may be no generall Example, but this well I wot, crueltie hath the greatest punishment appointed for it in hell, which may it please you and the rest of the Gods to be attentiue, I will prove with a knowne history. The Gods setting them selues in their seates, shewed by their silence how they lik’d of his motion: whereupon Orpheus began thus.

Orpheus Tale.

Since the mad frowes of Bacchus (in that I was sworn an enemy to women through the vnkindnes of Euridice,)enton me to death while I fate playing musique to the Rockes, which seemed to moue at my melody: my soule sent to Pluto, I founde fauour at his handes for that he wronged me of my wife, that I had free liberty to passe vnto every seuerall mancion: wherupon one day with my Harpe I walked through seuerall places, and heard seuerall complaints, but at the last I came to a thicke fogge, the smoake and stench so deadly and pestilent, as all the ghosts in hell, respecting this dungeon, seemed to liue in Elysium: out of this mist I heard the voice of a woman, uttering pittifull shrikes: hauinge remorfe
of her passions, I toucht my Harpe, and plaid thinking while my musicke lafted, to make her forget her torments, as I had done the other ghosts in hell, but she told me all was in vaine, as her faulte exceeded all, so her torture was more then they all: for here quoth she I hang by the haire of thy head in so thicke a smoake and flinking a fog, as no tongue can expresse, nor imagination conceiue it. Desirous to heare the caufe of this strange extreame, I askt her name and the offence: she wisht mee halfe angrily to ceafe my fidling, and she would discourse at large: I put vp my pipes at such a dry blowe and she murmured out of the fogge thus.

I am Lidia that renowned Princesse, whose neere matched beauty seemed like the gorgious pomp of Phæbus, too bright for the day: rung strongly out of the trumpe of Fame, as it filled euery eare with wonder: Daughter to Aspoph, the King of Lydia: who thought himself not fortunate for his Diadem, fith other Kings could boast of Crownes: nor for his great possesion although indued with large territories, as happy that hee had a Daughter whose excellencie in faucy stained Venus, whose austere chastitie set Diana to silence with a blush: know whatsoeuer thou art that standest attentiue to my tale, that ruddie Rose in all Damasco, the whitest Lillies in th
creeks of Danuby, might not if they had united their native colours, but have bashed at the vermilion ftaine, flourisht vpon the pure Christall of my face: the Marguerites of the westerne Indies counted more bright and rich, then that which Cleopatra quaff to Anthonie, the Corall highest in his pride vpon the Affricke shoares, might well be graced to resemble my teeth and lippes; but neuer honoured to ouerreach my purenes. Remaining thus the mirrour of the Worlde, and natures strangest miracle: there arrriued in our Court a Thracian knight, of personage tall, proportioned in most exquisite forme, his face but too faire for his qualities, for hee was a braue and a resolute Souldiour. This Caualier comming amongst divers others to see the roialtie of the state of Lidia, no sooner had a glaunce of my beautie, but he set downe his staffe, resoluing either to perrish in so sweet a Labynth, or in time happily to stumble out with Theseus. He had not staide long in my Fathers Court, but hee shewed such knightly deeds of chiualrie amongst the nobilitie, lightned with the extraordinary sparkes of a courageous minde, that not onely hee was liked and loued of all the cheefe Peeres of the Realmes, but the report of his valoure / comming to my Fathers eares, hee was highly honored of him, & placed in short time as Generall of his war-
like forces by Land: resting in this estimation with the King preferment was no means to quiet his minde, for loue had wounded so deepe, as honour by no means might remedy, that as the Elephants can hardly bee haled from the fight of the Waft, or the Roe buck from gazing at red cloth, so there was no obiect that could so much allure the wauering eyes of this Thracian called Acestes, as the surpafling beautie of the Princesse Lydia, yea, so deeply he doted, that as the Camelion gorgeth herelfe with gazing into the ayre, so he fedde his fancie with staring on the heauenly face of his Goddesse, so long dallying in the flame, that he scorcht his wings, & in time consumed his whole body. Beeing thus passionate, hauing none so familiar as he durft make [his confidant], hee fell thus to debate with himself.

Is it Acestes loue that troubles thee? why thou art a Souldiour, sworne to armes, not to Armour; to encounter foes in the feelde, not to courte Ladies in the Chamber: Hercules had almoft performed his twelue labours, ere he durft find leyfure to loue, and thou art scarfe acquainted with Mars, but thou seekest to be priuate friend to Venus: away fond foole, to the Speare and Shielde, manage thy horfe, though heere in a peaceable Country: let not Bees hiue in thy Helmet, ruft inblaze the figure of sloath on thy Armour, or loue call thee
her milkfoppe, by whom warre it selfe hath approoued martiaall; hast thou forgotte that which thou suckest out of thy Nurfe's teate, that to loue is to loose, and fancie bee it neuer so charie, is meere folly: for loue how soever it bee, is but a Chaos of cares: and fancie though neuer so fortunate, hath her crosses: for if thou inioy the beauty of Venus, thou shalt finde it small vantage: if thou get one as nice as Minerua, thou mayst put thy winnings in thine eye: if as gorgious as Iuno, thy account being cast, thy sums will be rated with losse: yea / be shee chaste, be shee vertuous, be shee curteous, constant, rich, renowned, honest, honourable, yet if thou be wedded to a woman, thinke thou shalt finde in her sufficient vanity to counteruaile her vertue: assure thy selfe neuer to liue lesse without disquiet, nor die before thou have cause to repent: which Craterus the Emperour noted, when wishing that some sinifter misfortune might befall his foe: he prayed vnto the gods he might be married in his youth, and dye without issue in his age: accounting mariage by this wish, farre more full of prejudice, then of pleasure. This, yea all this Acestes thou knowest to be true: but suppose it were not, is there not sufficient to disswade? beside, seest thou not? or hath fancie cast such a make before thine eyes, that thou wilt not see? that her beauty as
it is excellent, so it is high sealed: both in the
dignity of her parentage, & the selfe conceite of
her mind, to be gazed at, and so honored: not to
be reacht at and so enjoyed: thou seest she is little
liberall of her lookes, much lesse prodigall of her
loue: she couets rather a God, then a man: the
amongst men think she wil aime at the highest,
or fit still as she is: Pride in her greatest pompe
fits inthrond in her eyes, and disdaine in her
lookes: that if she glaunce to so low as Acestes, it
is rather to grace him with a smile then to shew
him any fauour: beside, fortune hath opsoed
her selfe to thy aspiring thoughts, in that thy
good will hath not yet deserued any such guerdon:
thy desire, is farre aboue thy desert: and the poore
stay of a wandring knight, farre vnsitte for the
Princely state of worthy Lidia: But suppose she
were pricked in the same veine, and that Venus
would friendly instill some drops of her inchaunted
water to mollifie her heart, yet \( \breve{\text{Y}} \) Duke her Father
will neither condiscend to her mind, nor content
to my motion: nay, if he should but heare of
such reckles folly, as he hath wrought my pro-
motion, so hee would worke my confusion: and in
troth Acestes, not without cause: for art thou so
voyde of vertue, or vowde to vice, as to / requite
his liberality with such disloyalty: to returne the
trust which hee reposeth in thee with such treachery:
Tuft, Loue is aboue Lord or law, friend or faith: where Loue buddeth, no Maifter is made account off, no King cared for, no friend feared of, no duty respected: but all things done according to the quality that is predominant. Haft thou beene a Souldiour, and dreameft thou of such doubts? are the courtings of Venus, more perrillous then the incounters of Mars? or the deniall of a Lady, worse then the daunt of a foe: no Acestes, be not faint harted: as the North Ilands, where the people Iberi dwell, foster no venemous beast, nor the Sea called Mare mortuum feedeth no Fish, so are there no Cowards suffered to arriue at Paphos: she is but a woman, and therefore to be wonne: Then found on the march, afke not of what degree she is, but where she is: these words Acestes (carry emphasis) and are more fit for a Souldier then for a Louer: for loue is quefte, and if it be ouer-strained, cracketh at the first wreft: enduring in this doubt, he fat downe deeply ouer-charged with melancholy passions: that as he which eateth of the Goord Nutte, loseth his memory: and as the Elephant feeding on the Helytropian be-commeth sleepe: so Acestes fell into a drowsie kind of contemplature, that to auoide such cogitations as combred his minde, hee got him selfe into a Gallery which was built betweene the Turrets of the house, and there sette himselfe downe as halfe
in a traunce: Loue, that tooke pitty of this patient, so fauord him, that he had not fat long in his dumps but that Lidia came thether all alone to be solitary, who seeing Acesṭes fitting thus sadly flumbring, determined for her owne recreation to be a little pleasent with him, and therefore awakened him thus.

Why how now Acesṭes, is it your custome in Thracia to use flumbers after meat for Phisick? or is it some melancholy impression that thus amateth your fences? trust me at the first I called to remembrance the picture that Zerxes / drew of Endimion, lying upon the mount of Erecinus, who leaning his head on his hand, his eyes shutte as one in a dreame: yet had his face so bedued with distilling teares, as his outward plaints did sufficiently bewray his inward passions: and so Acesṭes, in this thy solitary dump, didst thou resemble Endimion, both in countenance and colour, that had teares fallen from thine eyes as thou wert in a traunce, I had happily demaunded how Phebe had vfed thee: So apalde was Acesṭes at this sodaine presence of Lidia, that he sat still as a man depreied of his fenses: till at the last gathering of his wittes together he start vp, and his due reuerence done, he made this answere.

I think Madam, that melancholy is not particular either to person or place, but that being
a complexion, it followeth oft times the quality of
the affection: so that the mind any way distrest,
the body must yeald in effect to the most precious
part: I confesse therefore, that being disquiet at my
hart, I felt mine eyes heauy, as they which were
the cheefeft procurers of my malady: but when I
awoke and sawe your excellency, both your presence
and curtesie greatly daunted my mind: your pre-
fence, in dazeling mine eyes so suddenly with so
solemne an object: your curtesie, in that your
Ladyshippe without curiousitie would vouchsafe to
talke with so mean a Gentleman: but I see the best
fruite hath the brauest blossomes: the most precious
stone, is choosen by the most gliftering hue, and
the beft conditions by the sweetest countenance:
so that where beauty reigneth, there vertue re-
maineth: and vnder a faire face resteth a faithfull
hart: But whereas you say you had taken mee for
Endimion by my penitrature and countenance, but
that I wanted teares to decipher my sorrow: I
answer, that the hottest thunders are not euer
quenched with raine, nor the deepest greeses euer
discouered by teares: the stone Caratides fryeth
without and is cold within, the Germander leafe
when it is moft full of moisture looketh then
moft dry: where the sea is moft deepe, there it
is moft calme: & where is the smallest sithew of
tears, there oft are the greatest effect of sorrow.
For trust me Madam, I thinke Endimion fighing for the absence of his Lady Luna, neuer felt more bitter passions on the mount Erecinus, then I suffered in this halfe waking slumber: why (quoth Lidia) are you in loue? Acefles at this question fetcht a deepe sigh, as it seemed his heart ftrings should haue crackt in funder: he stood as one in an exftasie, doubting whether nowe hee should take time by the fore-head, or to defer it till afterward: well, seeing opportunity fo fit, he boldly tooke hart at grace, and began to glie this encunter.

They (Madame) that seeke to ftop the swift running Volgo, a Riuer that leadeth into Perfa, by ftying the streame, maketh the flood flow more fiercely: to reprefte the fier, is to encrease the flame: and to conceale loue, is to fmother fmoake in the nofelrill, which either wil out, or else stiflth: wounds fed of with delayes feister, and oft prooue incurable: fancy long held in the graffe, feldome prooues a timely Harueft: which makes me to fet my hazard on the Dice, and either prefently to heare the curteous fentence of my life, or the cruell doome of my death. Since moft excellent Princesse, I arrived at the Court of Lidia, fo hath mine eyes fed on the beauty of your face, mine eares wrapt in admiration of your deuine wit, my mind inchaunted with the consideration
of your vertues, and my hart as the receptacle of all these excellencies, so deuoted to the substance that contriues such supernaturall qualities, that the exceeding pleasure, which so long held mee in delight, at length funck fo deepe, that they grew to greeuous passions: to say all (what I could at large discource) in on[e] worde, so long did I gaze at your beauty, that I was snared, and so long did I admire your vertue, that now I reft your Captiue: fo farre Madame entred the Laborinth, that either I muft perrish with the Myno / taure, or els humbly craue your ayde, that the clue of your mercy may hale me forth of such an intricate danger.

*Lidia*, who swelled in choller at these speeches, coulde not brooke to heare vp the ende of his discource, but faring like angry Ioue, who in his rage couereth the beautifull Skye with a world of stormes, fo she incensed with dysdaine, filled her sweet countenaunce with a shaddowe of bitter frownes, & knitting her browes she beganne thus to reply.

Why gentle maister Knight, hath too much familiaritie bredde contempt? are you such a good Phifioignonmer, that you haue insight into my wrinkle in the browe and dimple in the cheekes? I see well if Apelles that cunning Painter, suffer the greasie Sowter to take a view of his curious
worke, hee will growe so malapart as to meddle with his picture, that he must be thrust into his shop with *Ne fuitor ultra crepidum*: if the proude Centaur *Ixion* bee bidden to the feast of the Gods, no leffe then *Iuno* her selfe will suffice him for his choyce.

Set a Begger on horsebacke, and they say he will never light: extoll one of base stock to any degree of dignitie, and who so proud and hautie: I speake this *Acestes* to thy reprooſe: for that my Father hath made thee generall of his forces, seekest thou to maifter him in fortune: will no dyet downe but my Fathers owne Dish? no meaner mate suſſife vnleſſe thou marry with a Prince? Dyd my Father preferre thee, and now wilt thou presume to bee his better? have my lookes beene so louing, my glaunces so full of good will, as to promise so much as thou doost presume? no, but the least countenaunce of familiarietie to a servile minde, procureth great incouragement: haft thou euer noted any of my actions so base, that thou mighteſt think I would match with a man of thy calling? Haue I wantond it fo euer in thy fight, as thou mighteſt think mee fit for *Venus*? But suppose my minde were fo fonde, as I would/(foring fo hie as euer I haue doone) foopoe nowe fo low? thinkeſt thou my Father coulde affoorde thee hys Daughter
Lidia, whom he farre prifeth aboue his crown? hopeft thou to compaffe his consent? No, but if he knewe of thy daring presumtion, he would repay thy follie with such punishments, as thy aspiring thoughts doe merrit: hee woulde vnplume thee of all thy feathers: and like Efops Crowe turne thee naked to the worlde: that they which grudged at thy hastie promotion, might laugh at thy sudaine fall: if therfore thou loue thine own welfare, keepe thy selfe within thy bounds: leaft in soaring with the Hobby, to fall to the ground with the Larke: and in daring with Phaeton, thou fal headlong into such infirmities, as thou shalt neuer be able to creepe out of: and with that she flung away in a great rage, and left Acestes passing passionate: so that hee fate him downe againe more melancholie then he was before: musing and meditating vpon the cruell resolution of Lidia: thinking thus on his harde fortune, vpon a suddaie hee fell into these tearmes.

But by the sweete, how should wee know the fower: the white seemeth moft siluer hued when it is adioyned to blacke: and prosperitie is moft sweetest when it hath beene fore-croffed with aduersity. This principle perhaps Lidia meanes to make me try by experience, thinking to feede mee first with bitter broathes, that after, dainty fare may more delight me: for the childing colde
of Winter, makes the Sommers Sun more pleafant: and the frowning lookes of Lidia, will cause her smiles to feeme more cheerefull. Then Acesfes ceafe not to pursue thy fute, vntill thou finde her more curteous, or resolutely vowed to remaine obftinate.

Thus like a valiant Champion, Acesfes neuer feared that mislike hung in Womens browes, and into theyr harts hee could not pry: but hoped the beft, and sought for opportunitie to iterate his fute in this diftreffe. But Fortune / meaning pleasantly to fport with this young nouice, would not minifter fuch fitte occasion that hee might haue fole and solitary access to his Goddeffe: for Lidia vpon pretended purpose, fo warily avoided his companie: and with fuch disdainfull lookes rewarded his proffered dutie, that Acesfes was faie to aime his course by a new compaffe, and therefore getting into his Chamber, stepping to his standifh, he wrote her a Letter to this eifect.

Acesfes to the beautifull Princeffe
Lidia, wisheth what shee defires.

Such as take furfeite by feeding too greedily on the Hony combes of Hibla, feeke cure by tafting ouermuch of the sweete fuger Canes in Candi. The Phalanga ftingeth deadly, and his venome can be drawne out onely by rubbing ouer the place with golde. They which fall ficke of
Loue, must have potions ministered by fancie & charmes from Venus to tie about their temples, or els come Apollo with all his drugs: the patient will returne him thys anfwer, Nullis amor est medicabilis Herbis. I speake thys sweet Princesse, as a patient. troubles with the fame passions: for so deeply have I imprinted the rich Carraeters of your exquisite perfections, in the closet of my thoughts: that neither mine owne endeuour, feeling I have aspyred too hie, nor your rigor checking me, I am borne to[o] lowe, ferueth any way to race out those Ideas which so firmelie I have conceiued: I seeke to suppresse loue with reason: and I finde that I quench fire with Flaxe: I vfe absence, that is Oyle in the flame: I frequent company, their talke is tedious vnto mee: I seeke to be solitarie, oh then as in visions your sweete selfe is present, as that celestiall obieét whereon mine eye coueteth to gaze, and my minde to meditate. Sith then Madame, your beautie hath made me surfeit, let your curteous bountie cure my diseafe: receiét / him not so rigorously that regardeth you with such reuerence: poore knights haue their loues not in their own willes, but as Loue and Fortune pleafeth to allot: some gaze hie and stumble not, as Vulcan whě he courted Venus: some looke low and gaine not, as Eumenides, that married a Farmers daughter that prouded vnchaft: sure I am howsoever I shall
speede, it will be more honor for mee to perrish in her desires, then live in base fortunes. Then Madam, seeing my loue is like to ʃ stone Lincofis, which the lowder the winde bloweth, and the deeper they are drencht in the water, the more they burne and blaze: so the more you seeke to coole my fancie with disdaine, the more my affection is kindled with desire: the greater dispayre you drive mee into by denial, the greater hope incouraged by constancie I haue to obtaine my requests? in which fervent affection I meane to remaine without change, craving in liew of this my loialtie, that I may bee admitted by degrees into your fauor, euens as my deserts in loue shall merrit, which shall be as the blisse of heauen to him that pineth away, and as yours onely and euer.

Still in hope,

_Acestes._

This Letter [was] conueid with great speede and no leffe secrefy to Lidia beeing then solitary in her Chamber, who receiuing them, vnripping the seales, sawe no sooner the name of Acestes, but shee perceived he was importunate in his old fute: which droue her into such a fury, as at the firft shee flung away his Letter in great disdaine, vpbrayding him of immoderate presumption, that durft attempt the loue of such a Paragon: so that throughly in-
flamed with choller, shee stept hastily to the Letter and red it, which after shee had perused, falling into a satyricall scoffing kinde of vaine, shee rudely returned him this aunfwere. /

To her new found Louer Acefes
the great Knight of Thracia, Health.

Sweete Sir, I receiued your passionate Letters, and pitty them as the inhabitants of Labia Laborinth doo the passengers that perrish on their shelues, whom they gaze on, but neuer releeue: your witty inuention tells me that you are stung with the Phalanga, and so are in loue: take it the more patiently, for no doubt the serpent was Venus messenger, els had shee not fancy instead of infeccion: But alas, your malady cannot be cured but by my meanes: know then braue Cauialier of Thracia, that my cunning is too small to enterprize the composition of any secret simples, and my calling too great to become a Phisition to such a paltring Patient: so that I neyther can nor will cure any other mans disease by being prejudiciall to mine owne safety: but gentle sir, thinke me not cruel: for it is the influence of the starres, & the effectes of nature that maketh these contrarieties, as hauing opposde vs in the calculation of our nativity: for as the Panther cannot abide the company of the
Oonce, as the Vulture is mortall enemy to the Eagle, and the blood of a Lyon and a Woolfe can neuer be mixed in one bowle, so as impossible it is by requests, be they neuer so ruthfull, to become thy friend, which by the destinies and instinct of nature, am thy mortall foe. Cease then to accuse mee of cruelty, and leave off to appeale to my curtesie, for thou shalt alwayes be sure to finde the one, and neuer to feele the other: yet leaft thou should condemne Lidia of ingratitude, who euer was bountifull to her greatest foes, though I cannot inwardly mitigate thy misery, yet I wil outwardly teach thee to apply such playsters, as if the experience of them approue true, shal greatly appease thy paine: It is reported that he which drinketh of the rier / Auerna, cooleth and mortifieth his affections, but if the water be toucht by any meanes before it be drunke, the vertue thereof is of no value. He that weareth the fethers of the bird Ezalon about him, shal euer be fortunate in his loue, but if they be not puld when the Sunne is eclipsed, they are of no force: and to be breefe, there is nothing that sooner driueth away amorous conceits, the to rub the temples of thy head with the sweate of an Asfe, which if you can performe, as no doubt you may put in praefice, feare not but you shal count my Phisicke authentical. Thus gentle Knight of Thracia, you haue heard my
mind, and so I warn you to wade no further, least I haue cause to laugh and you to repent.

Lidia of Lidia resolued to mislike of Acestes of Thracia.

This Letter shee sent by one of her Gentlewomen to Acestes, who no sooner read the contents, but the disdain of his Goddesse strooke such a colde dumpe to his hart, that hee sat as the picture of Pigmalion, when the poore caruer leaned with great passion on his marble mistresse: his thoughts were on dispaire, his musings on dispaire, the obieects to his eyes, founded the vgly shadowe of dispaire: that as one lunaticke, he said: Venus was the ftrumpet of Mars, the baude of Jupiter, the Patroneffe of leachers: and that in all her Kingdome there was neyther loue nor vertue, but luft and vanity: I graunt (quoth he) she hath beauty to bestow, but so it is tempred with pride, as hee that buyes it dooth penstentiam emere: shee hath many such truls as Helena to fell, but they were either so froward or so frolick, as feare may perfwade them from the one, or turne them from the other: shee is Goddesse of womens hearts, but shee trickes them vp with such false colours, and engraues so many principles of her Philosophy, in the very center of it, that they are as expert in coyning of deceites, forging of teares, feigning
of sighes, casting of lookes, lending of fawning smiles, and such pre Sheldon pollicies to bewitch men, as ever the Caldees were in their diuinations: but [that] this is, suffiseth not to revenge me on her words: would she were mortall, the would shee were Mars, that I might with my arming Sworde, pearce their disdaine and ingratitude in single Combate.

As thus he was halfe in a frensie, one came to him from the King with Letters, the contents whereof were, that he should make him ready with all possible speede to passe into Pamphilia, to make invaafion with fire and sword: This newes come to Acestes view as a man reuied fro the dead, hee burft from his former plaints, and began thus to frolick with him selfe: Now despight of Venus hath Fortune sworne to ioyne me in friendfhip with opportunity, now time proffers the full cup, and the deuill take me if I carowfe it not:

Now Lidia shall be mine if euer she shalbe to any: women are wonne with honors: the fame of Prowesse challengeth more then eloquence, a Soulsdiers sword preuaileth more with a Princesse, the a Cowardes pen: when newes shall come to Lidia that Acestes hath made a conquest of Pamphilia, whc he sends the Kings Crowne as a token to the faire and matchles Lidia, the no doubt but she wil be as curteous as now she is cruell: her lookes
will lighten louve, where now they drop hate: her words will be welcome, where now they threten reuenge: Conquerers carry commaunds in their foreheads, and louve kneels to them where others bow to louve! then Acestes ply thee, martiall thy Souldiours in haft to Pamphilia, and there fight both for honor and louve, which either resolve to get or to misse of both with death: Hauing thus comforted him selfe, he prouided all things necessary for his voyage into Pamphilia, both of Souldiers, money, victuals, and munition: which beeing ready, taking his leave onelie of the King (for Lidia would not / to be seene: then marched forwarde towardes Pamphilia.

No sooner was he arriued within the Territories, but with fire and sword he made such furious invasian, that the poore Inhabitants thought Mars had beeene sent to fill the Countrey with stratagems: the King hearing of this martiall Acestes, understanding what a warlike knight he was, how hardy to attempt, how politique in placing the Squadrons of his men, not onely for aduantage of troupes, but of ground: further being foure score thousand strong in footmen at armes and horse, he found his owne strenght vnable to withstand him, that he sent to ſe Kings of Cylicia and Cariá for ayde: who vnited with him in a league, brought downe with as great speede as might be, their forces, and
generally setting them in troupes, devided them into three feuerall Battalions, whereof the Kings in person were Conducts: and so marching to meet Acestes they incountred him in the great plaine Refena: there both Campes lay intrencht by the space of three dayes: at laft Acestes sent out a few Horfe to dare them from their fortifications, which the Kings seeing, afhamde that one man of so base account, shou'd furpasse such Princes in magnanimity and valour: issued out, and ordring their battailes brauely, gaue the charge: Acestes seeing more then hee lookt for, doubled courage, and receiued them with such resolution, that the Cylicians and Kings of Cariá wisht they had kept safe in their Kingdomes: yet making no signe of doubt, they encouraged their men and renued the charge: but in vaine, for Acestes with a Cornet of Dimilaunce and men at armes, had broken into their mane battaile, that the troopes disordered, they began to fly: they of Pamphylia brought in fresh men, but Acestes matched them with his spare Squadrons: that ytterly discomfited the: then [the] Lidians began pursuite, and made great slaughter, and many were slayne: the Kinges of Cariá and Cylicia escapt, hee of Pamphilia was slayne, as fighting / more venteroufly for that twas for his owne. Acestes, hauing the victoy, founded the retraite, gaue hys Souldiours the spoile to
encourage them, and one day[s] rest to ease them: the next he marched vp into the Countrey, possessed himselfe of the kingdom to his Kings vse, tooke the noble men sworn to allegiance, and in every Towne of any strength he placed gari-pons: This done, he dispatched Letters to his Soueraigne of his conquest, and sent the crown of the King of Pamphilia to Lidia for a present: the messenger dispatcht, he resolved on revenge, and beside his Commission went into Cariá and Cylicia, where he set vp the like trophies: for hee made conquest of both the Kingdoms, and brought the two Kings, much treasure, and many prisoners, to Lidia. But while hee was in his warres, and iournying homeward, the Letters came to the King, and the Crowne to his daughter: he receiued the one, shee scornfully reiectted the other: but her Father was glad of such newes, looking daily for the honouring of Acetès, who was the longer for his other victories.

Well, the day came: Acetès was entred Lidia, and the King as for his credite he coulde doo no lesse, did summon the Peeres of his Realme to meete at his Courte, which then he held in Ragusa, the principall City of his Dominions: whether they all repaired and prepared Juftes, Turneyes, and Bariers, in triumph of Acetès victories. It was not long but this lustie warriour came to the
Cittie with his spoyle, and entered the gates, where he was receiued of the Cittizens with great signes of ioy: passing through the streets as the auncient Romaine Dictators did in their triumphes: crowned with a Lawrell Garland, seate in a triumphing Chariot, he rode richly thorow the streets with great shoutes and showes to theyr Pallace: where dismounting, hee marched like Mars or Hercules, attended on with two Kings, in such portly and magnificall order, that the King and the nobles seeing him enter the Hall, where the King on a rich throne was seate, and his Daughter on his right hand, were amazed, as noting in his face some extraordinary sparkes of Chiualrie: Aceftes pacing vp to the steps that descended from the Kings seate, placing on eyther hande a King, began to deliuer his tale.

Right mightie Soueraigne, executing the charge of the Generall of thy forces against Pamphilia, as thy commaund and my allegiance bad me, I entred with fire and sword, and by the helpe of Fortune made conquest of the Countrey: the King is slaine, his Crowne I sent to thy Daughter, the kingdom is garifond to thy vfe: his confederates these two kings of Cariá & Cylicia, for that they vnited their supplies to his forces, I inuaded, conquered, and brought hither Captiues: their Crownes, theyr kingdoms, the treasure, the bond-
flaues, for that they were without thy Comission, I not present to thee, but to the Princesse Lidia, with all the honour I won in the fielde, euer vowing to devote all my thoughts, my actions, and my Sword and life, as preft to execute her commaunde and service: with that, rising vp, he led the Kings to the Princesse, and deliuered them her as her Captiues: shee could not for shame in such a presence, but faine a good countenaunce, and accept them gratefully: whom shee forthwith presented to her Father, who entertaind them as belonged to such Kingly prisoners: all the Nobles castig their eyes on Acestes, as honouring the man for his vertues: the King starting vp, gaue him great thanks, and bad him demaunde some-what before that honorable assemblie: with the gift whereof hee might gratifie him: swearing whatsoever he craued, as he was true King hee woulde performe it: Acestes hearing this happy motion, castig his eye on the Lady Lidia, boldly beganne his request thus.

Although right mighty Soueraigne, Crownes and Kingdoms be sweete, and your grace hath willed mee to aske any thing without acception: yet for that I paunde my life & honor for the attchiuing of these conquests with my blood, which a Souldiour holdeth far deerer than Diadems, I little make account of such pelfe: but rather make

xii.
choise of that which I prefer before honour, life, and land, or all the world, if it should be presented to me: and that is, the faire and vertuous Princesse Lidia. Scarce had Acestes vtttered this worde Lidia, but the King starting from his seat, turned to his daughter, and asked what loue was passed betwixt her & Acestes? Such (quoth shee) with a frowning countenance, as past betwixt Iuno and the Centaure Ixion: I not deny, but before his iourney to Pamphilia, he courted and made great fute by worde, and letters, but howe I disdained the motion of so base a companion, let the aunswers of his Letters manifest: And nowe before this royall & honorable assembly I protest, if Acestes, were feature like Narcissus, as courageous as Hercules, hauing as many heroicall vertues as euer had any, and could present me euery day two Kings for Captuies till he made me Empresse of the World, yet woulde I disdaine him, as one vnworthy the Princesse Lidia. At this aunswere, all the assembly abashed, as counting the Princesse discourteous and ingrate: the King as a man inflamed with furie, began to prosecute his Daughters speech in this manner: Prefumptuous Thracian, vnfitte with these late conquests, rather obtained by the ill fortune of these Kings, then thy prowesse: for thou haft done mee seruice, I graunte thee life, but for thyne aspyring thoughts
to demaunde the Princeſſe Lidia, I diſcharge thee of the Generalſhip, and absolutely of my ſeruice, commaunding thee vpon paine of death; within ten dayes to depart out of all my dominions, and never to approch my Confines or land. This faide, the King in great choller roſe vp ready to to depart: the Nobles were amazed and greeued, yea, and grudged secretly at Aceſtes wrong, but for feare of the King were ſilent: Aceſtes howsoever inwardly vexed, yet ſhewed no diſcontent in his countenaunce, but with a Šouldiers courage pulling of his Garland, ſaid: I am not diſmaied at this doome, for that I never greeued at the ouerthwarts of Fortune: what I haue got in thy Court, I leaue, as disdaining ought ♦ is thine: the honour I haue wonne, is mine owne, and that thou canſt not depreue me off, and so committing my fortunes to my deserts, I leaue thee and thy Court: and so soone as may be thy Country: where if euere I arriue, I dare thee to doo thy worſt: and with that Aceſtes went away, and the King with the two Kings and the Lords, passed in to dinner.

No sooner was Aceſtes alone, but the ingratitude of the King, the disdaine of his Daughter, the disgrace offered by both, so pierſt him to the hart, that as ſuch as drink of Leſhe become obliuious: so he forgetting the beauty of Lidia, fell to ſuch deepe thoughts of hate and reuenge, that he
enjoyed himself for a great space to be solitary, that *Nemesis* and he might consult together how to bring both the Father and the Daughter to confusion: at last he resolved to go to *Armenia* to *Sertorius*, there great Potentate of that Country, whom he knew to be mortall enemie to the King of *Lidia*, and in this resolution he took his journey. No sooner was he arrived in the Armenian Court, but worde was brought to *Sertorius* that *Acestes* the martiall *Thracian*, that conquered *Pamphilia*, *Cariá*, and *Cyliciá*, was come disguised, and as a stranger into his Court: the King hearing this, tooke one or two of his chief Lords, and went to salute *Acestes*, and to giue him honourable entertainement, such as belonged to so mightie a Conquerer: *Acestes* perceiving himselfe to be known, after due reverence done to the King, began at large to discourse to him what seruice he had done to the King of *Lidia*, and how he was rewarded, craving succour and supply of his Maieftie, that hee might reuenge with his Sword. The King amazed at such monstrous ingratitude, wondering how such base resolutions coulde harbour in / the hart of a Prince, he promised *Acestes* not onely to ayde him with an army of approoued Souldiers, but in person to hazard him selfe, both to requite olde injuries and to reprooue in iustice such an abuse offered without
defer
t.

This answer of Sertorius so contented Acestes, that after great thanks, hee rested in the Court, passing frolicke, til the forces were furnishing: which no sooner were ready, but without delay Sertorius and Acestes marched merrily forward towards the confines of Lidia: as soone as Acestes had sette his foote within the ground of the ingratefull King, drawing his Sword, hee sware not to sheathe it, till hee had made it drunke with the blood of Lidian, commaunding his Souldiers (for Sertorius had giuen him the ordning of the battailes) that they should use all extremities of martall lawe], burne, sack, spoile Citties, Townes, and Castles, to cast all to the ground, to take none Captiues of whatsoeuer degree or sex, but to put all to the Sword: men as they were subiects in Lidiá, women as the wormes that he most hated: Children as the issue of them both: the pillage of all should be theirs, only the King of Armenia should haue the Kingdome, and he would content him selfe with reuenge: this Oration ended, he furiously marched forward, and where hee came, left the Countrey desolate: The King of Lidiá hearing this, was driuen into a great agony, but dissembling his greefe for feare of discouraging his Souldiers, he leuied a mighty army, and hafted forward to buckle with Acestes, whom he met halfe at advantage, as hauing most
of his men at pillage: whereupon the Lidians taking opportunity, set vpon the Armenians, but Aceftes so rangde those that he had, in such warlike fort: that he not only aboade the braue of his enemy, but entred his battaile, disordered his ranckes, and put them to the flight: many were slaine in that present place, such as escapt and fled, were met by the Pillage[r]s and harriers of the Armenians, and all put to the sword, so that of forty thoufand Lidians there scarce remained thirty with the King, who pafling vp into the Country, inconfi him felfe within a strong Caftel, with his Daughter Lidia, a few faint harted Souldiers, and all the treaure hee could get: Aceftes followed his Fortunes, and leauing Sertorius behind with the mayne battaile, tooke with him ten thoufand Horfe, and fixe thoufand foote, and made after the King of Lidia, as faft as his men were able to march: comming at laft to the Caftell where he was inconfi, firft he intrencht a fiege round about and legard it on euery fide, then he damd vp all fuch springs, wels, and Conduits, as ferued the Caftell with fresh water: this done, hee resolued not to loofe a man at the aflault, but to make them yeeld by famine. The Princeffe Lidia looking ouer the walls, feeing how her mortall enemy had girt the Caftell with Souldiers, Armenians, men there [who] thirfted after blood,
and hated both her and her Father, she fell from thoughts to passions, from passions to teares: insomuch that she sat her downe, and wept bitterly: her Father comming vp the batilments, seeing his daughter in such perplexed estate, finding want of victuals, and that of force he must be famished: greefe stopping his speech, he sat him downe and bare her company in her passions: and after consulted how to preuent ensuing misery, many conjectures cast: at last they resolued to submit themselues to his mercy: whereupon Lidia decking her selfe in most gorgious attire, accompanied onely with two of her Ladies, passed out of the Caftell gate, & went toward the Legar: the Sentonell, no sooner had them in hold, but they were honourably conueyed to the Pauilion of Acestes, who being certified that the Princeffe Lidia was attended to speake with him, leapt from his feate, and went to entertaine her: Lidia no sooner saw him, but she fell downe at his feete: Acestes courteously tooke her vp, and setting her in his feate, demaunded her what she craued: Lidia all blubbered with teares, falling downe on her knees, began thus. Mighty / Acestes, if repentance were any satisfaction for offences, or sorrowe any salue to couer ingratitude, if teares might wipe away disdaine, if a Virgines blood would pay raunfome for them which haue done
amiss: I would present all these to pacifie the fury of thy conquering Sword: but I know such deepe hate of my Fathers ingratitude, such desire to reuenge my reckless disdain, and the disgrace proffered by both: hath set a fire the hart of Acestes, as nothing may serue to quench such an ouer heated flame: Oh yet might I finde so much favour, that my death might redeeme the old man my Father, if not for the losse of Kingdome, yet of life: and from falling into the handes of his ancient enemy Sertorius, I should account Acestes as merciful as he is valiant: if my treaties may not preuaile, as it little behooueth Acestes any way to fauour Lidia, yet graunt me this, that I may dye vpon thine owne Sworde, that my blood vanishing on thy blade, thou mayst be satisfied, and I slauhtred, by the hand of Acestes so braue a Souldier, might dye contented.

No sooner had shee vttered these words, but shee poured forth such streames of teares, as made the Armenians to take pitty of the distressed Princesse: Acestes taking her vp againe, called for his Sworde, and vnsheathing, falling downe at her feete, began thus to make reply.

Such deepe impression of greefe sweete Goddesse, hath pierced the heart of Acestes, in that hee hath lifted his Sworde against that Lord that harboreth Lidia, such sorrow, such repentance, such remorce,
in that I haue doone any thing that might offend the Princeffe Lidia, whose deuine presence hath raced out all intent to reuenge: and so captiuated againe her Acestes, that heere franckly he offreth his conquering Sworde, (that hath atchiued so many battailes) into the hand of his mistresse to chastice eyther with death if she please, that daring Knight that hath /so deeply offended: and with that he sat as a man in a traunce: Lidia seeing she had brought the Beare to the stake, thought now so cunningly to muzzle, as she would keepe him heereafter from biting: following therefore her inchauntment, shee fell about his necke, and wette his cheekes with her teares in such fort, that at laft from weeping they fell to kifling, yea so did Acestes comfort Lidia, that from melancholy she grew to be somewhat plesant: the Knight posseffed thus of his Lady (as hee thought) after he had banqueted her with such delicates as fouldiers can afford, taking only her hand for pawne of his safety, he went with her to the Castell: where they were no sooner entred, but the King of Lidia with his Crowne in his hand met Acestes, and submitting him selfe, offered both his diadem and daughter as due to so victorius a champion. Acestes refused his dignities, but accepting of his Daughter, embraced her, and entred into priuate and familier parle: insomuch that choller past vpon both sides, they
began to treate of the marriage: which was concluded, when the King of Armenia returned out of his kingdom: wherupon without delay (so fervent was the loue of Aceftes,) hee tooke leau of Lidia and her Father, and going downe to the Legar, rayfed the siege, to the great admiration of all his Souldiers, and from thence marched to the Campe, where Sertorius lay: to whom Aceftes reueeled what had past, and craued that he would depart out of Lidia, with sufficient coyne aunswerable for his costs: Sertorius with a frowning looke tolde him that in battaile he neuer plaid in iest, and what he had wonne with the blood of his Souldiers and danger of his owne person, he would not deliuer vp but by battaile: Aceftes whose minde was too haughty to intreat, saied nothing, but secretly stole from the Campe, and trauersing through Lidia, got vp of Horse and Footemen, the number of fixe and thirty thousand, with whome trufiting to his Fortunes, hee marched closely and secretly to the Campe, of / Sertorius, where he arrriued about midnight: vsing new pollicy, that before had conquered with prowesse: so that killing the watch and Sentonell, hee past the Courte of garde, and fet vpoun the Souldiers, making a great slaughter of such men as were sleepeie and amaz’d: yet Sertorius escaped: but Aceftes pressed forward and followed him into Armenia, where his fortunes
so ferued him, that hee conquered Armenia, and brought the King himselfe captiue to Lidia. Comming thus in tryumph to my Fathers court, seating him in greater pompe and posseffions then euer he had he began to vfe his late familiarity towards me, but I as a woman changed in calling and condition, shooke him off with more disdaine then before: hee challenged my Fathers promife, who presently commaunded he should be apprehended and put in close prison: wee hauing thus caught the Lyon in $ snare, my Father questioned mee how I would haue him vfed. I would not refolue on any leffe penaltie then death: my reafon, leaft in letting him abroad, he should fal to his fortunes: the maner of his martirdome I deuised to be famine, as hee intended to vs by his leager: my Father yeelding him absolutely into my hands, I prosecuted the matter, causing euery day for his greater torment, a course or two of daintie viands to be carried before the window that looked into his Chamber, and my selfe to agrauate his sorrowes, would passe often by his lodging in moft pleafant humor. Acestes seeing himselfe thus ouertaken in his own follie, by trusting too much the teares of a woman, by not exclaime againft the sexe, but seeing no way but death, no kinde but famine, he resolued to shew an honorable mind in great patience, & so remained there foure dayes, when
pinched with extreame hunger almost euen to death: as Lidia passed by, he fell into these passions.

Meate, meate, oh for want of meate I perrish: Ah hunger, hunger, the extreamest of all extreme-ties: were I amongst men, men would pittie me: amongst beastes, beastes / should feede me or feede vpon mee. Amidst ß pikes would I venterously escape, or valiantly perrish: on the land, I could shift: in the Sea, I could swimme: no place so barren, no people so barberous that woulde not releue me or soone ridde mee: every where more help, no where leffe hope: ah hunger, hunger, the extreamest of all extremities. Thrice cruell Lidia, no worse I will tearme thee, for that once I loued thee: not suffering mee to liue, nor simply to dye: my head is giddy, mine eyes dazell, fallen are my cheekes, and [on] my tonge die my words, my finewes shrinke, my blood consumeth, all my limmes fainte, and my hart failes me: euery minute I die, and I wish I dyd but die: too long am I out of the way, to bee well out of the way: Ah hunger, hunger, the extreamest of all extremities.

Ah Lidia, haue I deserued thus to be doone vnto: I gaue thee Crownes, and thou wilt not giue mee a crum: I bestowed Kingdoms on thy Father, and hee presents mee with famine: thus Loue wrought the traine, and fortune nay mine owne
folly performed the treason: yet this hope I haue, that he that hath found me, is hee that hath fashioned mee, who though hee scourge mee, will yet saue me: how be it my God, I cannot but cry, ah hunger, hunger, the extreamest of all extremities.

What is it I would not rather be, then thus bee? then thus, ah then thus in pined walles to attende so bitter a death? I faint, alas I faint, my harts anguish commaundeth my tongues silence: then Acestes silently be patient, patiently be penitent, penitently perish, and that last martirdome will be thy leaft miserie, because longer thou shalt not cry, ah hunger, hunger, the extreamest of all extremeties.

This complaint highly contented Lidia, so that shee departed and tolde it to her Father, rejoycing that her deuised fourme of death sorted to so bitter euents: well, another day past, so hungry grew Acestes, that he greedely fed/ on the flesh on his armes, spilling that bloode with his own teeth, which before he had so prisde in many battailes: which when he had done, readie to giue vp the goft, seeing the bare bones of his armes, he fell into this last complaint: Miserable wretch euen in the higheft degree, miserably with my teeth haue I tyred on mine own flesh, till now bloodlesse and famished, my latest gaspe hardly giues passage
to a few, and my farewell wordes: Lidia, ah Lidia, wherof is thy hard hart formed? that the sting of such di[f]riffle cannot pierce it? haft thou the eares of a woman to heare my cries, and not the hart of a woman to pitty my case? Ah Lidia, hee that loued thee, for that hee loued thee muft die: he that founded thy praises in sundry Prouinces, him haft thou pinned and pined vp, till those armes are bare from flesh, that in many battailes bruted thy fame: I will not curse, thou art Lidia, nor exclaime at my last date, thou wert my loue: nor pray for reuenge, sith at my death my patience shall giue my soule the better paffage. But fondly, how short a time haue I to speake, and yet how foolishly I speake, to name my earthly Goddesse when I shoulde pray to my heauenly God: the one hath consumed me, the other muft saue mee: now comes the touch, my hart yeeldes to him that framed it, now the last bitter sweete pang of death endes what the malice of man hath inflicted: and fo falling downe he died.

As soone as I perceiued hee was dead, not yet content with reuenge, I caufed his body to be hang'd in chaynes, that the world might see the trophee of my crueltie.

The manner of his death being knowne, the Nobles and specially the Commons began to murmure that so braue a warriour who had made
foure Kingdoms tributories to *Lidia*, shoulde so ingratefully perrish through $\downarrow$ malicious disdain of a woman, yea so farre it perrished into the hart of *Selidon*, great Duke of our realme, that suddainly causing a mutiny, he summond moft of the Nobles, & told the such a tyrant was too heauy for them to beeare, to be short the/Nobles agreed, the Commons of their free will came in flocks to reuenge, so that he had quickly leauied an Armie of an hundred thousand men, and entred into the Castle, toooke mee and my Father prisoners, whom hee commaunded to be famished in the fame place where *Acestes* ended his life: there without remorfe we dyed: they tooke downe the body of *Acestes*, and buried him with princelie funerals, and ouer his tombe, for that he attempted the reuenge, they crowned Solydor [= Selidon] King of *Lidia*.

As soone as she had ended her tale, she fell to her wonted cryes and shrikes, not answering to any question, so that I left the place and returnd backe with my Harp.

*Orpheus* hauing thus discoursed, *Jupiter* asked *Venus* how she liked of the tale: marry quoth shee, as of one that *Orpheus* tells, comming out of *Hell*: nothing prejudiciall to my Dietie, fith shee was enemy to my loue, and of so auftere chaftitie, it rather toucheth *Iuno* or *Diana*: the one stately
in her lookes, the other too chary in her thoughts: for my part so I dislike of her disdainfull crueltie, as if I might haue censured, if possible it might haue beene, she should have had a more bitter death vpon earth, and a more pinching paine in hell: Truth quoth Mercurie, for perhaps the paine is not so great to remaine in the fogge, as the remembrance how faire once shee was, and nowe to haue all smeared with the smoake: I think when Venus was a maid, she was more chary of her face then her maidenhead: and more warie of her beautie then her honestie. These quippes quoth Mars, are digressions, but leaue Venus and talke of Lidia, whose life was so strickt, whose hart so opposde to loue, whose thoughtes so full of pride and disdaine, as her instance serueth rather to bee produced for a wonder, then for example to condemne women, sith the world I thinke containes not one so bad: Apollo smiling said, Well taken Mars for you[r] owne aduantage, women must be pleade, and Venus will frowne if she be not flattered: Vulcan fits fast a sleepe, or else I would not haue spoake so broad before, but to drink down all the frumps, Ganimede (quoth he) fill in Nectar: so the Gods from disputing fel to carowling, and then Arion tuning his instrument, began to warble out this Ditty.
Seated upon the crooked Dolphins back,
Scudding amidst the purple coloured waues:
Gazing aloofe for Land, Neptune in black,
Attended with the Tritons as his flaues:
Threw forth such stormes as made the ayre thick:
For greefe his Lady Thetis was so sick.

Such plaints he throbd as made the Dolphin stay:
Women (quoth he) are harbours of mans health,
Pleasures for night, and comforts for the day:
What are faire women but rich natures wealth?
Thetis is such, and more if more may be:
Thetis is sick, then what may comfort me?

Women are sweets that value mens lowreft ills,
Women are Saints, their vertues are so rare:
Obedient soules that seeke to please mens wills,
Such loue with faith, such Jewels women are:
Thetis is such, and more if more may be:
Thetis is sick, then what may comfort me?

With that he diu’d into the Corall waues,
To see his loue, with all his watry flaues.
The Dolphin swam, yet this I learned then:
Faire women are rich Jewels vnto men.

_Arion_ hauing ended his Ditty, _Apollo_ sayde, this falls out fitte, for _Orpheus_ hauing made the diuision XII.
of a woman's nature to be either too cruel, or too
curteous: Arion standeth in his song as well to
defend, as he to oppose: accounting women the
wealth of nature, and farre more profitable then
Orpheus saies they are prejudiciall, therfore if it
please the rest of the Gods, we'll heare what Arion
censures of that sexe: they gladly agreed, and
Apollo commaunded him to shewe his opinion,
whereupon Arion began thus.

No sooneer right mighty Gods, had nature in her
curious mould forme the counterfeite of Beauty,
but looking vpon her workmanship, shee fell in loue
with that metaphysicall excellency, as Pigmalion did
with the perfection of his owne Art: which may
assure vs, that it is most exquisite, wherein curious
nature taketh such extreame delight: this glorious
Idea drawne out from the secret temper of the
graces, nature, bestowed more prodigally vpon
women then men, as creatures more worthy and
excellent: the richest gold hath the rarest colour,
the purest stones are most cleare, the sweetest
Flowers most pleasing to the eye: and women as
the purest quintessence circuloted from all other
liuing things, are therefore the most beautifull and
faire: yea in their own sex, beauty is the touch-
tstone of vertue, and the fairer a woman is, the fuller
of good conditions: for such as nature hath either
slipt ouer with negligence, or made in her melan-
choly, so that they are ill favoured and deformed eyther in face or body: such I holde as a principle to be counted stigmaticall, as noted by nature to be of a bad constitution: then must we confesse that beauty is excellent, as the pride of nature: deuine, as fetched from the Gods: glorious, as the delight of the eye: pleasing, as the content of the hart: and to be esteemed above all things, as the very couer and superficies vnder which vertue lyes hid: if then men seeing such heauenly obiects, such sweet Saints, haue their eyes fixed, their minds fettered, their thoughts enchanted with their loues, are they to be blamed or not? rather to be thought of Heroicall conceite: that place their liking on the foundation of beauty, and to be counted men of great judgement, that in their desires seeke to covnite themselues to such an excellency: for may not he which enjoyeth a beautifull Lady, boaft that he possesseth at command? by spending a few yeeres in wooing, some part of his living in expenses, his dayes quiet in sighs, his nights sleep in teares: by these toyes and a few other passions, he possesseth himself of that creature which the graces and nature had studied many ages to make excellent: yet there be some such satirical copes-mates, that spare not to raile against them, calling them the imperfection of nature, saying beauty is vanity, and the signe of little honesty, noting women
as waifish, froward, deceitfull, toyish, light, fullen, proud, inconstant, discourteous, cruell, and what not: such as can afford them no better speeches, I would haue either made Euenuches or Effeni or plaine Afles, neuer to be favoured of women, but to be accounted as floicall companions, vnfit to attend on such beautifull and vertuous creatures: for in my opinion sweete and simple soules, they be pleasant, open harted, far from deceit God wote: as bearing all their owne secrets, both graue and yet hauing many mad and merry tricks to pleasure men, humble & lowly, submitting themselves to what their friends will lay vpon them: constant, as never to be turned from their opinions: kind enough, and to be short, as full of excellent qualities as the precious stone Silex is full of secret vertue: and this right mighty Gods is my opinion of women: The Gods smiled at this cenfure of Arion, and wished him if he could to proue it with an instance as Orpheus did the contrary: Arion laying by his instrument, and the Gods being silent, he told his tale to this effect.

Arions Tale.

After that Right mighty Gods, the Pirats had heaued me ouer boord, & that being receiued vpon a Dolphins back, I was safely transported to Loyath, the King glad of my arriuall, as
honoring me for that I was counted the most perfect musitioin in Thrace, and musing at the strangenes of my fortunes: to make his peers and princes of his land, partakers not only of my melody but of the wonder, he proclaimed a general feast, not of voluntary but upon command, that all Dukes, Earles, Barrons, Knights, and other Gentlemen, should with their wives and children, for the more magnificence be present: which strict Edict, was so straitly obeyed of all, that at the day appoynted, none failed to be present: there appeard in the Kings Pallace such troupes of Lords and Ladies, as might with their glorious brauery ouercharge the eye with pleafure. To these the King presented me clad in my rich robe, with mine instrument even as I fate on the Dolphins back, with the whole discourse of my fortunes: whereat they were all driuen into a wondring admiration; after long gazing on me, as at a man referued to some higher or more hatefull deftiny, they fate downe in the great Hall to dinner: beeing placed by the King him felfe and his Sonne, who then playde the Marshall of the Hall: the yong Prince, whose name was Philomenes, giuing greatest attendance where hee fawe the faireft Ladies, as hauing his eye drawn rather with beauty then chialtry: at laft he espied a lampe that lightned all the reft, or rather disgraced
them, as *Phebe* dooth the little fixed Starres: for so farre she surpaft the other Ladies in excellency, as she did in dignity: and by birth she was daughter to *Pelopidas* the Duke, and great commandeer in *Corinth*: this Lady whose name was *Argentina*, was so faire, as touching the faultles mixture of vermilion flourisht vpon Ivory, & so full of favor for the perfect proportion of the lin[e]aments, wherevpon this native colour was ouer-dasht, that nature had made beauty absolute, and beauty made *Argentina* the moft excellent: *Philomenes* seeing so heauenly a Nimph, stood staring on her face, as at a wonder, gazing so long, that *Venus* seeing *Ceres* / and *Bacchus* honored all the rest, thought to arrest the yong Prince for her attendant, so that leuelling *Cupids* arrow aright, and wishing the boy to draw home, she pierft *Philomenes* so deepe, that hee shrunk & start at the suddaine prick which this inuenomed arrow had tainted him with: feeding thus his eye, his fancy & his thoughtes with contemplation, hee loft his stomacke to gorge with the Camelion on the ayre: sure was that meffe where *Argentina* fat, to haue what attendance the Prince could grace them with: but their seruice was so broken and so ill sewed, that either they muft coniecture the Prince to bee no cunning seruitor, or els that his hart was on his halfe-penny: well, dinner being
doone, and the tables taken vp, Arion fell to his musick, and the cheefe Ladies to the measures: Philomenes ringleader of the rout, singled out the Lady Argentina, who blushing to see the young Prince make choice of her above the rest, gave such a glorie to her face, that Philomenes all on fire at the sight, had almost forgotte the time of the measure: but calling his wits together, he led formost till the musick ceas't, & then wringing her by the hand, he whisperd to her thus: I see Madam that all these Lords and Ladies present, frolicke themselues as fittting the time, and feeding my Fathers delightful humor, my silly selfe onely excepted: who thys day giuing mine eyes leaue to banquet on your beautie, commanded my stomacke to faft and pray, that my heart which had surfetted on the excellencie of loue, might finde a curteous Phisition: now sweete saint, it refleth in your fauour, whether I shall triumph as the moft happieft, or sorrow as the moft miserable. The musick called on to another measure, so that Philomenes was interrupted, & forced to tread his tafke, but as soone as the musicke gaue breathing time, Argentina beginning her exordium with a blush, made Philomenes this aunfwer.

It seemeth sir, that tis a mery time, your honor is so well disposed to bee pleasant, singling out
a cunning musition, the / simplest plaine song, that your descant might seeme the more refin'd. It behoueth such as myself to brook ye frumps of a Prince, & to take them for favours, for Kings wordes may not offend, if in wrath, much lesse in iest: might your handmaide dare to reply, in my opinion howsoeuer your eyes haue banquettet, your sight is neuer the worfe, nor they the more satisfied: for your harts surfeite I will bee beadwoman with your stomack not in fasting, but pray that your Phisition may prooue such as would fit your desires: but my Lorde to your last clause, it is unlikely your mirth dependeth of my fauour, whose fauour cannot profit, nor disfauour prejudice, but taking it in iest as your honor profferd it, I pray you for my part my Lord to be as merry as you please. The instruments founded, and forward must Philomenes, who wisht Arions strings might crack, that his melody ended, he might proceed in his prattle. As soone as the musick stopt againe, the Prince began thus. Beleeue me Lady, if you take my talk for a iest, you haue a deeper insight in my thoughts then myself: for by your diuine beauty, (the oath that for the whole world I would not infringe) so deeply in earnest did I break into my first passion, that my hart feeleth far more then my tongue vttered, so strongly and strangely hath loue on a suddain vi et armis as they say, made
entrance, there where fancie before could haue no passeage, so that rightly haft thou sayde \textit{Argentina}, that though mine eyes & hart surfeited, yet they are not satisfies: as vowing themselfes ever dued to so excellent a choyse: which if they may possesse as it lyes in your power, nature by no meanes may minifter the greater content: As \textit{Philomenes} was ready to wade further in his discourse, the daunce, I know not vpon what occasion, brake of, and the olde man calling his sonne, tolde the noblemen they shoule heare one of \textit{Arions} schollers; whervpon he commaunded his sonne to take the instrument in hys hand, who very nie as skilful as his Master, obeyed his Fathers charge, and glad that time had giuen him opportunitie/to shew his cunning before this Goddesse, hee began to play, and sung a sonnet to this effect.

\begin{verbatim}
C\textit{Vp}id abroade was lated in the night, 
His winges were wet with ranging in the 
raine; 
Harbour he fought; to mee hee tooke his flight, 
To dry his plumes: I heard the boy complaine; 
I opte the doore, and graunted his desire, 
I rose my selfe, and made the wagge a fire. 
Looking more narrow by the fiers flame, 
I spied his quiuer hanging by his backe: 
\end{verbatim}
Doubting the boy might my misfortune frame,
    I would haue gone for feare of further wrack.
    But what I drad, did mee poore wretch betide:
    For forth he drew an arrow from his fide.

He pierft the quick, and I began to fstart,
    A pleafing wound but that it was too hie;
His fhaft procurde a sharpe yet fugred fmart:
    Away he flewe, for why his winges were dry;
    But left the arrow flicking in my breft:
    That fore I greeude I welcomd fuch a gueft.

Philomenes hauing ended his fong, they all
generallie commended the skil of the yong Prince, but especially Argentina, who hearing him
fing both fweetly and passionately, was charmed
as if she had heard the Sirens, that while all the
other[s] walked abroad, fhee fained herselfe not
well, and withdrew solitary into her Chamber,
where alone, fhe began to ruminate in her
memory all the perfeotions of Philomenes, as well
the fweetnes of his face, y proportion of his
body, as the vertues & qualities of the mind : his
courage, his comlines, his dignities, but there fhe
ftopt & gaue a figh, as being a prince too high for
her to gaze at : meditating thus, fhee fo fwallowed
vp the potions y Venus had tempred with her
forcery, as drunk with his beutie, fhe began to
fall with herselfe into this parle.
Unhappy *Argentina*, whose youth vertue hath brideled with chaft thoughtes, whose yeeres beauty inchaunteth with fond lookes: resembling the nettle, which may be handled in the bud, but ftingeth in the flower: do thy vertues increafe like the pace of a Crab, backwarde? Haft thou in thy cradle been continent, and wilt thou in thy fadle be impudent? art thou come to this feaft to buy follie? knowft thou not that *Venus* flands by the wine-presse of *Bacchus*, and breathes her venom vpon his liquor? faft thou downe pleafant, & muft thou rise passionate? I and in loue *Argentina*? and why not in loue? was I not framed for loue? are not Womens harts the Exchequour where fancie yeelds vp his accounts? yes *Argentina*, and feare not to loue, for if thy choyce be right made, there can nothing come for marriage but honour: but with whom art thou in loue? with *Philomenes* the Kings Sonne and heire apparent to the Diadem of *Corinth*: a steppehigher *Argentina* then it becommeth thee to tread, a degree farre aboue thy fortunes, aftar to[o] high for thee to gaze at. Kings as they are men before the gods, fo are they gods before men: such high perfonages as wee muft honor with our lookes, not attempt with our loues: Why but *Argentina* he loues thee, he is inamored of thy beauty, hee fues with wordes, and intreates with his eyes: What then? cannot
such great Princes be sooner pensick then passionate: weare fauour in their mouthes, when they haue flatterie in theyr harts? Dooth not loue hang in their eye-lyddes, which as it is taken in with euery looke, so tis shaken off with euery winke? is not their fancies like the Somers dew, which scarce wetteth the grasse, before it bee dryed vp with the Sunne? take heed Argentina, Princes haue liberties and priuiledges, they can laugh at faultes, which wee muft pay with pennalties: Wee hold Venus for a Goddesse, they neuer offer her incense nor sacrifice: and yet they no sooner craue, but she is ready to graunt: yea but hath sworne, ah fond foole, Periuria ridet Amantum Jupiter: Louers oaths are like fetters made of glasse, that glister faire, but couple in restraint: if swearing had made loue perfect, Carthage had posseft Eneas for their King: Phillis had not hangd her selfe, nor Medea said Deteriora sequor: yet men muft be credited, els shall loue be a shadow: talkt of, but not put in execution: all are not sons to Anchifes, nor brothers to Iafon, nor traitors like Demophon: Philomenes face bewraies his faith, & me thinkes his looks containe loyalty: Thus poore wench doo I perswade my selfe to the best, whereas perhaps he meanes but to sport with me, to make triall of my wit: well if it be so, I will endeuor to loue him leffe thē I doo, but if he mean
truth, I will labour to loue him more then I haue done: and with this she rested content, & went abroad to find out the rest of the Ladies. *Argentina* had not servued her selfe thus in secret, but *Philomenes* was as solitary: for getting himselfe vp into his Study, then setting down his head on his hand, & his elbow on his book, he began thus to debate with himselfe. *Philomenes* thou hast read much & reapt little, that at one look hast learnt more the in feauen yeres study thou couldst discouer: *Hermes* told thee that beauty was a star, whose influence had sundry effects: this was Allegorical, & thou didst only passe it over for a principle. *Auicen* said that loue was a fury: how didst thou esteeme of this but as an axiome? *Epistetus* called *Venus* the restlesse planet: thou tookest this for a dark & Amphibiological Aphorisme: comments thou hadst none, and conceiue thou couldst not: but now if *Hermes*, *Auicen*, or *Epistetus* want interpreters, let amorous Schollers be auditours to my precepts: for I haue found beauty a star, and haue gazed against it: Loue is a fury, for it is full of passions, & *Venus* a restlesse starre, for since the Goddesse distilled into my thoughts her precious Balms, the opperation hath been so mighty, as my greatest rest hath beene restlesse disquiet: what need these ambiguies, this schollerisme, this foolery: Thou art in loue
with Argentina, the commander's daughter of Corinth, a Duke, but thy subject: why then dost thou use preambles & protestations? canst thou not say flatly I am in love? Venus Cofer when they have the greatest sound, are always most empty: & lovers when they prattle most, are thought either great talkers, or deep flatterers: then Philomenes discover thy mind: Argentina is a woman, & therefore to be wooed, & so to be won: Kings may command, where poor men cannot intreat: tis better to name a crown then to write a Letter: an ounce of give me, is worth a pound of heare me: the name of Queen is a great argument, & therefore feare not: thou hast as much to be liked, as she to be loved. Thus far well Philomenes, but suppose she hath already setled her affection, & hath made choice of some other: seeke not to divert her, for she that is faithles to one, will be constant to none: if thou loue her, with her not to be disloyall, but rather paune thy life, then disparage her honor, & wrestle with Love, whom if thou subdue thou esteemst a glorious conquest. In this resolution he flung out of his chamber, and passing into the priuy Garden, there he found all the Ladies sparseled about in sundry borders, som gathering flowers, others in discourses of the excellency of the place, some in prattle with the birds, all busie, none idle: taking thus a super-
ficial view of them all, as hauing his eye wanding for a fairer obiect, he passed forward to finde out if it might be the Lady Argentina, whome he spied with her mother in a shady walke of the Garden: seeing non[e] but the two, thither went Philomenes & saluted them in this maner: Honorable Dutches, well accompanied with your faire daughter, the Mother happy for bearing so sweete a creature, & Argentina fortunate in coming from such a parent: your walking in this shady Arbour resembles Latona, tripping with her train, Diana in the Lawns, where hauing her selfe tried the forwardnes of Esculapius her husband, she schoold her daughter, / so that Diana vowed perpetual chastity: I hope Lady that y Duke Pelopidus, brooks not company with Escula[pi]us, & therefore you neede not nusle vp your daughter in such herefie: The Dutches hearing the yong Prince so plesant, being her selfe a Lady of merry disposition, made him this anfwer: Lord P[h]ilomenes, were I Latona indeed, & as waspish in minde, as ready as she to revenge, I would cause Phebus to chastice your frumps as he did the sons of Mobæ, in loding my back with such reuerence, & my daughter with such beauty: to your strange supposition, as far as Pelopides differs from Esculapius, so far was mine from Latonas perswasion, so beleeeue me sir, if Roses be not gathered in the bud, they either wither or
proue windfalls: Maids must be married, leaft they be marred: if they be coy & sware chastity, they oft wish and wil with secrecy: youth is the subject of loue, & Siens that are grafted yong, haue the surest ioynts, therefore so far am I from that auftere peruerfnes of some mothers, that as yong as Argentina is, if there were a man whom she could loue & me like of, they should never break off for yeeres. Philomenes hearing how the Dutches desembled not, began thus to reply: & what manner of man should he be that might both content you, & please your daughter? the one measuring by age, the other by youth: I would haue him, quoth the Dutches, to be of age answerable to my daughters yeeres, and his parëtage proportioned to her parent-age, leaft inequality of time or birth might breed mischeefe: his personage such as might feed her eye, his vertues such as might plese vs both, his liuing answearable to all these, & him would I count a fit husband for Argentina. A right conclusion quoth Philomenes, for there is no match ğ is right made if pelse conclude not the premises: if he had ğ age of Adon, the honors of Hercules, ğ proportio of Theseus, the vertues of ğ boy, yet si nil attuleris ibis Homere foras, if he haue not liuing, al his loue is laid in ğ dust: but what say you Argentina, in faith let me as your goftly father, haue you at shrift before / your mother,
tel me were you never in love? *Argentina* blush'd & was silent, as one that durst not be bold before her mother: whereupon *Philomenes* said, see Madam, tis your presence makes your daughter so squemish, I pray you prate with some other of the Ladies, & giue vs leaue a little to be secret heere in this walk: perhaps I wil be a futer, to your daughter: what say you Madam, shal I haue your good wil? I, & my good word my Lord quoth she, if you meane earnestly: & with that smilling she went her way & left them to theselues: *Philomenes* seeing himselfe thus alone with his Goddesse, thought to take hold of her mothers words & frō the to driue his insinuation thus.

You heare sweet Saint, how fauourably your Mother speakes: now Madam, what cenfure shal I haue at your hands? I can not paint out many passions, nor tel tales with such large periods as many vs to doo, but I wil court thee and woo thee in one word, & that is *Argentina* I loue thee: more I cannot promise, and so much I will per forme by the faith of a Prince: *Argentina* seeing *Philomenes* speake so plainly, & therafter as she thought so faithfully, made this answr: my Lord, you take the antecedent of my mother's answr for a fauor, but you leaue out the consequent: and that is, if you meane in earnest, for
I cannot thinke your grace would look so low as vpō *Argentina*, but rather gaze at some glorious princeffe, whose Maiestie might match *Juno*, whose worthines *Pallas*, whose beauty *Venus*, & with these might bring for her dowry a Diadem: but? & with that *Argentina* staid & bluift: which *Philomenes* espied, & therfore wringing her by the hand staid: but, what Madam? nay forward with the rest or you proffer me great wrong: why then my Lord, quoth she, and with that shee gald him with a glance: but if your honor would vouchsafe to favor such a simple maid, as from a meane Lady to make her a Queene: for other the mariage I dare sweare your Lordship doth not intend: your Father gracing our loues with his Kingly consent, though I could not with loue / sufficient requite loue, as in person & parentage vnfit for your highnes, yet would I with obedience and humility make supply of these defects, which otherwise were wanting.

This answer of *Argentina* so contented *Philomenes*, as that hee stoode as a man in a trance: at last hee tooke her hand in his, and sweore, that before the feast were ended he wold make her princeffe of *Corinth*: let this suffice *Argentina*, qd. he, & with that he sealed vp the bargain with a kisse, and walked towadres her Mother, to whom he deliuered *Argentina* thus: Madam here I deliuer your daughter as safe as I receiued in outwarde appear-
ance, but how I haue schoold her, time will make
trial: perhaps we have strooke the match, and
therefore let the Lorde Pelopidus prouide a good
dowrie: and with that he went his way: when the
matter comes to that effect my Lord, you shall haue
a dukedome with her: at that the Prince turnd
back and said, thats mine already, and her Father
is like to bee my subject, and so to holde his
liuing in cheefe: the Dutchesse smilde, & thus
th[e]y parted. But leaveing Philomenes to the King
his Father, who hauing noted as narrowly as his
sonne, the beauty of Argentina, had great lyking
of the Lady, so that he made inquierie of those
which were Pelopidus neereft neighbours, what
disposition the virgin was of: they all affirmed
to the King that shee was so vertuous, humble,
curteous, and adorned with such excellent qualities,
as the fourme of her life was a methode wherby
other Gentlewomen did direct their actions. The
King hearing this, resolued in his minde there
coulde not be a fitter match for his Sonne: wher-
upon determining to break with the yong Prince:
as he was in this humor, hee met Philomenes, whom
he tooke aside, and began to question him as
concerning Argentina, whether hee cold fancy
the Lady or no? Philomenes afraide the King
had espyed their loues, made answer, that he
neuer tooke such narrow view of her that he
could yeeld his iudgement with affecion: then
doo qd. the King, and giue me within two daies
an anfwer, and fo he departed. *Philomenes* ioyfull
of this, no foo/ner met *Argentina*, but he told
what motion his Father had made: but to make
a smal haruest of a litle crop, *Philomenes* at the
two daies end so anfwered his Father, that
the King breaking with the Duke, it was con-
cluded that the end of the feast should be the
beginning of *y* marriage: which was such a ioy
to the nobles to see their yong Prince allied in his
owe Land, that they deuifed newe Justes and
paftimes, continuing the feast many dayes to their
great ioy: and the Louers moft happy content:
The mariage and the feast thus finifhed, the
Nobles departed: *Pelopidus* leauing his daughter
thus honorably espoused, took his leaue: the maried
couple staying still with the old King in his Court,
who being of great age, liued not long after, but
paide his debt unto nature, so that *Philomenes* was
crowned King of *Corinth*: Liuing thus happily
with his wife *Argentina*, thinking his degree too
high for Fortune to prejudice, it so fell out, that
*Marcion* the King of *Sycilia*, hearing that his
ancient enemy *Philomenes* father was dead, thought
to try what mettall was in the sonne, to proue
if he were as valiant and fortunate as his father:
therefore he leaued a great Army & prouided
a great fleete to saile to Corinth: which was no sooner rigged but he imbarqued his men, and as soone as wind & weather woulde permit, failed toward Corinth, where arriving in a Desert place, as politick to land without any great resistance: he vnshippt his men, and all his furniture for war: and letting his Nauie ride in the road, hee marched forward into the maine land, vsing as one ý intended a conquest, fire & sword. Philomenes hearing by Postes how Marcion was landed with a mighty Hoaft, and had spoiled many of his provinces, started vp, & summoning his Lords about him, raisd a mighty hoaft, such as neuer King of Corinth dyd before him, and with the marched to meet with Marcion: whom he incountred by the Riuier ý runneth by the great plaine called the Corinth downes: then pitching his pauilion, he intrenched his Army, and so had Marcion fortifird his: lying thus a while, at last by Heralts they resolued vp on a day of battaile, which once come & both the Armies rangd, they ioynd battaile so furiously, the one to côquer, the other to defend: Philomenes hart made one with equitie, the other with dispaire: that a long while ý fight was doubtfull, till at last fortune allotted the best to Marcion, in such fort that the fielde was his, the Corinthians most slaine, some fledde, the King valiantly fighting, taken prisoner: Mar-
cion triumphing in the victory, marched forwardes to the Citty, leading Philomenes as his Captiue: comming to the gates þy Cittizens yeelded vp the Keyes, & he as a valiant conquerour entred, & paffing into the pallace, found there the Queene all blubbred with teares, as a woman almost fencelesse: whom he comforted and committed to þy custodie of one of his Duke[s]: seated thus victoriously in Corinth, he not onely disgraded the King from all dignitie, but difrobing him, commanded that he should be turnd out of the pallace, and that he should not be releued vpon paine of death, but if he would haue any thing to satisfie his thirst, he should gette it with his handythrift: Philomenes not abashed at this doome, intreated the King to be good to his wife, and so went and became a labourer for day wages, contented with this fortune: Marcion the next day sent for the Queene, who although forlorne with teares, yet noting her narrowly, hee found her the fayreſt creature that euer yet in his life he had viewed, so that hee fell extreamly in loue with her, and offered her what lyberty or pleafure shee would haue, courting her with many faire promifes and amorous conceits, but all in vaine: for shee was resolued whatfoeuer fell, life or death, þy none to her but her loue Philomenes: Marcion captiuated in her beauty, was restlesse, feeling such strange
& vncouth passions, that at laft he fell into these termes.

What fond motions Marcion are these that disturb thy mind? what childish thoughts vnfit for a King, a fouldier, nay for one that hath conquered both a Crowne and Kingdom: thou camft from Sycilia to be victor, & heere thou art arriued & art vanquished: thou haft beaten Philomenes in battaile, & art brought vnnder by his wife in loue: thy resolution was to terrifie thy foes with thy fword, fo thou haft don, but faine to please a woman with thy tongue: by this fond foolery I may note, } Venus frowne is of more force then the weapons of Mars, that affections are harder to be suppresse then enemies to subdue: that loue is aboue King and Keifer: where Cupid commaunds, there dignity hath no pruiledge to withstand: then Marcion yeelde, fue and intreat: but whom? the wife of Philomenes thy captiue: rather commaund her, and what shee will not yeelde by intreaty, take by constraint: in fo dooing should I reape infamy, and forced loue is neuer sweete: no Marcion allure her with wealth, promife she shal be thy paramore, to seat her next thy felfe in thy kingdome: women are won with fauors, and there is none fo chaft but time and gifts may intice. In this resolution he sent for Argentina & beganne thus to deliuer his minde
vnto her. Thou seest Argentina, how I haue fauourd thee, not like a Princesse that were captiue, but euen as a Queene that is sole mistres and soueraigne of my affections: thy beauty hath coquered that hart which had made conquest of thy Country, & subdued him who before, womans feature neuer vanquished: then Argentina take pitty of him that for thy loue is so passionate, consent that I may enjoy thee as my paramour, and thou shalt be honourd as she that is best loued of the King of Sicilia. I could Argentina ye seest obtaine by force what I sue for by intreatie: but I couet rather to poffeffe my selfe of thy louely consent, then by constraint: yeeld therefore what I request, and heere before the Lords of Sicilia, I promise to grant whatsoever thou shalt commaund, so it touch not my Crowne nor thy Husbande, though to the danger of my person, freely without exception: Argentina as one nothing dismayd, returnd him this answere: I not deny Marcion thou haft subdued Corinth, and deposed the King, which I attribute rather to his bad fortunes, then thy prowesse or chialerie, but in all thy conquest thou shalt neuer boaft thou haft conquered either Philomenes or hys wife | Argentina, seeing we are only ouercom, not vanquished: in that both of vs remaine contented, and keepe our minds vntoucht: thou art inchaunted with my
loue: no *Marcion*, but perhaps thou art fed with lust, & neuer hope that *Argentina* will minister any means to appease the flame, although thou shouldst enforce her to consent by the most extreame torments: *Philomenes* liues, & so long wil I loue: not thee, but him whom I vowed to be true unto for euer: yet thy last condition hath somewhat persuaded me, that if thou graunt what I request, I will consent not only to be thy paramour but thine for euer: the king was so glad of this, that he iterated with an oath to performe her demand: then this it is quoth *Argentina*: To morrow morning thou shalt shut thy selfe into a secret place, whereof my self wil keepe the key, & there for three dayes thou shalt fast, without tasting any thing to aflake hunger or thirst: this time thou shalt pray to the Gods for the remission of our sins which we shal offend in by breach of matrimonie, then at the terme of three days thou shalt freely take the use of my body before thou eat any meat, otherwise if thou faile but as much as *Proserpina* to taste a graine of the pomgranet, thou shalt neuer after question me of loue: thus doo, and I grant to like thee, or els here is my head, let that pay my raunsom: *Marcion* was so setled in her beauty, that he thought it nothing to vndertake this tafke, and therfore promised before his Lords to faunt three daies, and then to lye with
her before he eat any meat, or els neuer to motion her any more of loue : whereupon the next day the Princeffe shut him vp till the date was expired : in which three dayes he felt such torments, such pinching hunger and extreme thirst, that he cursed loue, and exclaimed against beauty as a charme ÿ made men fenceles, willing to giue for one crum the Diadem of Corinth: well, the terme expired, all the Nobles were assembled & fat in the great hall expecting what event shold fall either of ÿ Kings fast, or of Argentinæ request : at last Argentina sent the key to one of the Lords, that the king might come into the Hall, whether she presently would repaire: the Lord went to the chamber doore and no sooner put the key to the lock, but Marcion started vp and cryed for meat: the Lord vnlockt and saw the King glance at him with such a fierce looke, that he was afraid and started back: villaine quoth Marcion, haft thou brought me any meat? and with that running as a mad man into the hall, flinging in fury among the Lords: Why Gentiles (quoth he) fit you heere without meat? why are not the tables spread? doo I allow such niggardly allowance, or will you famish him that fostereth you all? At this he was in a rage: Argentina apparailed in her richest robes, came pacing, that she looked more like an Angell then a mortall creature, in-
fomuch that every eye directed their glaunces at so heauenly an obiect, except Marcion, who at her sight fat as a man greatly amated: hauing her mayde followe her with a dish of meat crumd: Argentina with a smiling countenance taking him by the hand, sayd thus.

Redoubted Conquerour, according to promise, I am come in the presence of these Lords to offer my self subiect to your highnes plesure, ready to goe whither your grace shal conduct me: Marcion at this cried out, & thinkft thou Argentina that famisht men haue minde on beauty? or is hunger to be satisfied with loue? no, no, tis true Marcion, Sine Cerere & baco friget Venus, reason could not subdue luft, but fasting hath set it on a non plus: but what is that the mayde carries? meat my Lord quoth she for your honour after, and with that she blusht: Marcion no sooner heard her name meate, but he leapt to the mayde, puld away the dish, sayning: far wel fond loue, and welcome that wherof one morsele is worth a monarchy: Argentina giue me leaue to eate, for thou haft conquered Marcion in his own folly: and with that he fell to his meat: wherewith after he had somewhat appeased his hunger, fitting him in his feast royal, he began to parle with his Lords of Argentinias pollicy, highly extolling the constancy of so true a wife, and so far entred into
. consideration of the chaunce of fortune, / and fall of Princes, that rising from his throne, he went and embraced and kist Argentina, not only praising her for her redy inuention to perfwade him from his vanity, but for her fake sent for her husband, and yeelded him his Crowne and his Kingdome, and liuing his sworn friend, returned home into Sycilia.

No sooner had Arion ended his tale, but Mars taking opportunity, said : we see by this euent, that as women haue their vanities whereby to be checked, so they haue their vertues redounding greatly to their praiſe: beeing both affable and constant, although that single inſtance of Orpheus his Lidia did inferre the contrary: And so quoth Apollo would Venus serue for an inſtance if you mean of confotancy, for no doubt if you may be iudge, al beauty shall be vertue, & all women shall be Saints: & now quoth Iupiter, Apollo by your leaue to take Mars his part, we ought rightly to think of women, seeing so oft we feeke their favours, & speake to them by intreaties for their loues, otherwise we shoule proue our selues very ingrate: to beat the with rods, that feaste vs with banquets, to proffer them Scorpions that giues vs no worſe then their own selues: Liuely spokē quoth Mercury, but Iuno likes you neuer the
better for this flattery, as supposing you haue fued to more then contented her, or becomed you: but in my opinion, Arions tale paints out a paragon, a matchles mirrour, as wel for constancy, as the other for cruelty: these extremes therfore infer no certain cclusion, for they leauie a mean betweene both, wherein I think the nature of women doo consist, neither fo cruel but they wil grant, nor fo constant but they will yeeld, & rather oft-times proue too curteous then too vnkind: See quoth Mars how peeuishly you conclude, to taunt them still of vnconstancy: well Mercury, quoth he, thou art subtill, & canft by thy fallacions proue what thou wilt: but yet this I set down for mine own opinion, that women the more beautiful they are, the more curteous, the more constant, ye fuller of excelent qualities, or / rather vertues, and by the Riuier of Stycks I swere,—and with that he rose in choller, —this I will approoue against him that dare maintaine the contrary: though not with my pen, yet my fword: at this the Gods smild, and Mars in such a rage clapt his hand on the boord, that I awoke, not knowing what became of the Gods or of Arions soule, only I remembred their tales.

Being thus awakt, I lookt about me, and still faye my Shepheard: how now good fellow, quoth
I, haue I not taken a lufty nap? thy Pipe founded so sweetly, and there I had such a dreame as I would not haue loft for much, for I hope it wil after more profit me then all my iourney I haue paft to Erecinus: I am glad quoth the Shepheard, my pipe did thee so much pleasure, and if thy slumber hath presented thee any visions, note them, for al dreames that men see in Erecinus, prooue true: and with that standing vp, me thought he had wings on his head, shoulders, and feete: he bad me far well, & tooke his flight: then I knewe it was Mercury. Whereupon, calling to mind the occasion of my iourney: I found that either I had loft loue, or loue loft me: for my passions were eased: I left Erecinus and hafted away as faft as I could, glad that one dreame had rid me of fancy, which so long had fettred me, yet could I not hie so faft, but ere I could get home, I was ouertaken with repentance.

Robert Greene.

FINIS.
XXXI.

GREENS
GROATSWORTH OF WIT,
etc.
1592—1596.
NOTE.

'Greens Groatsworth of Wit' was originally published in 1592. It was re-published in 1596, 1600, 1616-17, 1620, 1621, 1629, 1637 and later (undated). Sir Egerton Brydges reprinted it at the Lee Priory Press, not very accurately. Our text is of 1596 from the Huth Library. See annotated Life in Vol. I.—G.
GREENS,
Groats-worth of Wit,
bought with a Million of
Repentaunce.

Describing the follie of youth, the falsihood of makeshift
flatterers, the miserie of the negligent, and mischiefes
of deceiving Courtezans.

Written before his death, and published at his
dying request.

Felicem fuisse insaeclum.

Vir. effet vulnere veritas.

LONDON,
Printed by Thomas Creede, for Richard Oliue
dwelling in Long Lane, and are there
to be sold. 1596.
THE PRINTER TO

the Gentle Readers.

I haue published heere Gentlemen for your mirth and benefit, Greenes groatesworth of wit. With sundry of his pleafant discourses, ye haue beene before delighted: But now hath death giuen a period to his pen: onely this happened into my hands, which I haue published for your pleasures: Accept it favorably because it was his laft birth, and not leaft worth, in my poore opinion. But I will ceafe to praiſe that which is aboue my conceit, and leaue it felfe to speake for it felfe: and fo abide your learned cenfuring.

Yours, W. W./
TO THE GENTLEMEN READERS.

Gentlemen. The Swan sings melodiously before death, that in all his life time vieth but a iarring sound. Greene though able inough to write, yet deeplyer searched with sickenesse then euer heretofore, sends you his Swanne-like song, for that he feares he shal neuer againe carroll to you woonted loue layes, neuer againe discouer to you youths pleasures. How euer yet sickenesse, riot, incontinence, haue at once shown their extremitie, yet if I recouer, you shall all see more fresh springs, then euer sprang from me, directyng you how to liue, yet not dis-wading you from loue. This is the laft I haue writ, and I feare me the laft I shall write. And how euer I haue beene censured for some of my former bookes, yet Gentlemen /I protest they were as I had speicall information. But passing them, I commend this to your favorable censures, and like an Embrion without shape, I feare me will bee thruft into the world. If I liue to
ende it, it shall be otherwise: if not, yet will I commend it to your courtesies, that you may as wel be acquainted with my repentant death, as you haue lamented my carelesse course of life. But as Nemo ante obitum felix, so Aēta Exitus probat: Befeeching therefore to bee deemed hereof as I deserue, I leaue the worke to your likings, and leaue you to your delights.
GREENES
Groatsworth of wit.

In an Iland bound with the Ocean, there was sometime a Citie situated, made rich by Marchandize and populous by long space: the name is not mentioned in the Antiquary, or else worn out by times Antiquitie: what it was it greatly skilles not: but therein thus it happened. An old new made Gentleman herein dwelt, of no small credit, exceeding wealth, and large conscience: he had gathered from many to bestowe vpon one, for though he had two sones, he esteemed but one, that being as himselfe, brought vp to be goldes bondman, was therefore held heire apparent of his ill gathered goods.

The other was a Scholler, and maried to a proper Gentlewoman, and therefore leaft regarded, for tis an olde said saw: To learning and law, ther's no
greater foe, then they that nothing know: yet was not the father altogether vnlettered, for he had good experience in a Nouverint, and by the vniverfall tearmes therein contained, had driuen many gentlewomen to seeke vnknownen countries: wife he was, for he boare office in his/parifh, and fate as formally in his fox-furd gowne, as if he had beene a very vpright dealing Burges: he was religious too, neuer without a booke at his belt, and a bolt in his mouth, ready to shoote through his sinfull neighbor.

And Latin he had some where learned, which though it were but little, yet was it profitable, for he had this Philosophie written in a ring, *Tu tibi cura*, which precept he curiously obferued, being in felfeloue so religious, as he held it no point of charitie to part with any thing, of which he liuing might make vfe.

But as all mortall things are momentarie, and no certaintie can bee founde in this vncertaine world, so Gorinius (for that shall be this Usurers name) after many a goutie pang that had pincht his exterior parts, many a curse of the people that mounted into heauens presence, was at laft with his laft summons, by a deadly diseafe arrested, where-againft when hee had long contended, and was by Phifitions giuen ouer, hee cald his two fonnes before him: and willing to performe the
olde prouerbe, *Qualis vita finis Ita*, hee thus prepared himselfe, and admonished them. My sonnes, (for so your mother faide ye were) and so I assure my selfe one of you is, and of the other I wil make no doubt.

You see the time is come, which I thought would neuer haue approached, and we must now be seperated, I feare neuer to meete againe. This sixteene yeares daily haue I liued vexed with disease: and might I liue sixteene more, how euery miserably, I should thinke it happie. But death is relentlesse, and will not be intreated: witleffe, and knowes not what good my gold might do him: senfelesse, & hath no pleafure in the delightfull places/I would offer him. In breefe, I thinke he hath with this foole my eldeft sonne beeene brought vp in the vniuersitie, and therefore accounts that in riches is no vertue. But you my sonne, (laying then his hand on the yongers head) haue thou another spirit: for without wealth life is a death: what is gentry if wealth be wanting, but base feruile beggerie? Some comforfet yet it is vnto me, to see how many gallants sprung of noble parents haue croucht to *Gorinius* to haue fight of his gold: O gold, desired golde, admired golde! and haue loft their patrimonies to *Gorinius*, because they haue not returned by their day that adored creature! How many
fchollers haue written rimes in Gorinius praife, and receiued (after long capping and reuerence) a fixpeny reward in signe of my superficial liberalitie. Breefely my yong Lucanio, how I haue bin reuerenst thou feest, when honefter men I confesse, haue beene set farre off: for to be rich is to be any thing, wise, honeft, worshipfull, or what not? I tell thee my sonne: when I came first to this Cittie, my whole wardrop was onely a fute of white fheepe fkins, my wealth an olde Groate, my wooning, the wide world. At this instant (O griefe to part with it) I haue in readie coyne threescore thousand pound, in plate and Jewels, xv. thousand, in bonds and specialties as much, in land nine hundred pound by the yeere: all which, Lucanio I bequeath to thee, onely I referue for Roberto thy well red brother, an olde Groate (being the ftocke I first began with) wherewith I with him to buy a groatfworth of wit: for he in my life hath reprooued my maner of life, and therefore at my death, shall not be contaminated with corrupt gaine. Heere by the way Gentlemen muft I digresse to shew the reason of Gorinius present speech: Roberto being / come from the Academie, to visit his father, there was a great feast provised: where for table talke, Roberto knowing his father and most of the companie to be execrable vsurers, inuayed mightily
against that abhorred vice, insomuch that he urged tears from divers of their eyes, and compunction in some of their hearts. Dinner being past, he comes to his father, requesting him to take no offence at his liberall speech, seeing what he had uttered was truth. Angrie, sonne (faide he) no by my honesty, (& that is somwhat I may say to you) but vse it still, and if thou canst perswade any of my neighbours from lending vpon vfurie, I shoould haue the more customers: to which when Roberto would haue replied, he shut himselfe into his studie, and fell to telling ouer his money.

This was Roberto's offence: nowe returne we to seeke Gorimus, who after he had thus vnequally distributed his goods and possessions, began to ask his sons how they liked his bequestes: either seemed agreed, and Roberto urged him with nothing more, then repentance of his sinloke: to thine owne said he, fond boy, and come my Lucanio, let me giue thee good counfel before my death: as for you sir, your bookes are your counsellors, and therefore to them I bequeath you. Ah Lucanio, my onely comfort, because I hope thou wilt as thy father be a gatherer, let me bleffe thee before I die. Multiply in wealth my sonne by anie meanes thou maist, onely flie Alchymie, for therein are more deceites then her beggerly Artiftes haue wordes; and yet are the wretches
more talkative than women. But my meaning is, thou shouldest not stand on conscience in causes of profite, but heape treasure upon treasure, for the time of neede: yet seeme to be devout, else shalt thou be held vile: frequent holy exercises, grave company, and above all, use the converstion of yong Gentlemen, who are so wedded to prodigalitie, that once in a quarter necessity knocks at their chamber doores: profer them kindnesse to relieue their wants, but be sure of good assurance: giue faire words till dayes of payment come, and then use my courfe, spare none: what though they tell of conscience (as a number will) looke but into the dealings of the world, & thou shalt see it is but idle words. Seest thou not many perish in the streets, and fall to theft for neede: whom small succor would relieve, then where is conscience, and why art thou bound to use it more then other men? Seest thou not daily forgeries, perjuries, oppressions, rackings of the poore, raising of rents, inhauncing of duties, euen by them that shuld be all conscience, if they meant as they speake: but Lucanio if thou reade well this booke, and with that hee reacht him (Machiauels works at large) thou shalt see what it is to be foole-holy, as to make scruple of conscience, where profit presents it selfe.

Befides, thou hast an instance by thy threed-bare
brother heere, who willing to do no wrong, hath lost his childs right: for who would wish any thing to him, that knowes not how to use it?

So much Lucanio for conscience: and yet I knowe not what the reason, but somewhat stings mee inwardly when I speake of it. I, father, said Roberto, it is the worme of conscience, that virges you at the last houre to remember your life, that eternall life may follow your repentance. Out foole (said this miserable father) I feele it now, it was onely a stitch. I will forward with my exhortation to Lucanio. As I saide my sonne, make spoyle of yong gallants by insinuating thy selfe amongst them, and be not moued to think their Auncetors were famous, but consider thine were obscure, and that thy father was the first Gentleman of the name: Lucanio thou art yet a Bachelor, and so keepe thee, till thou meete with one that is thy equall, I meane in wealth: regard not beautie, it is but a baite to entice thine neighbors eie: and the most faire are commonly most fond: use not too many familiars, for few prooue friends, and as easie it is to weigh the wind, as to diue into the thoughts of worldly glosers. I tell thee Lucanio, I haue seene foure score winters besides the odde seauen, yet saw I neuer him, that I esteemed as my friend but gold, that desired creature, whom I haue deerely loued, and found so firme a friend, as nothing to
me hauing it, hath beene wanting. No man but may thinke deerely of a true friend, and so doe I of it, laying it vnder fure locks, and lodging my heart therwith.

But now (Ah my Lucanio) now muft I leaue it, and to thee I leaue it with this leffon, loue none but thy selfe, if thou wilt liue esteemed. So turning him to his study, where his chiefe treasure lay, he loud cried out in the wise mans words, O mors quam amara, O death how bitter is thy memorie to him that hath al pleafures in this life, and so with two or three lamentable groanes he left his life: and to make short worke, was by Lucanio his fonne enterd, as the cuftome is with fome folemnitie: But leauing him that hath left the world, to him y cenfureth of euery worldly man, passe we to his fons: and fee how his long laied vp store is by Lucanio looked into. The youth was of cōdition simple, shamefaft, and flexible to any counfaile, which Roberto per/ceiu-ing, and pondering how little was left to him, grew into an inward contempt of his fathers vnequall legacie, and determinate resolution to worke Lucanio al poſsible injurie: here vpon thus conuerting the sweetneffe of his ftudie, to the sharpe thirft of reuenge, he (as Enuie is feſdom idle) fought out fit companions to eʃect his unbrotherly resolution. Neither in fuch a cafe is
ill companie farre to seeke, for the Sea hath scarce so ioperdies, as populous Citties haue deceiving Syrens, whose eies are Adamants, whose wares are witchcrafts, whose doores leade downe to death. With one of these female Serpents Roberto comforts, and they conclude, what euer they compassed, equally to share to their contentes. This match made, Lucanio was by his brother brought to the bush, where he had scarce pruned his wings, but hee was faste limed, and Roberto had what he expected. But that we may keepe forme, you shall heare how it fortuned.

Lucanio being on a time very pensiue, his brother brake with him in these tearmes. I wonder Lucanio why you are so disconsolate, that want not any thing in the world that may worke your content. If wealth may delight a man, you are with that sufficiently furnisht: if credit may procure a man any comfort, your word I knowe well, is as well accepted as any mans obligation: in this Citie are faire buildings and pleafant gardens, and caufe of solace: of them I am assured you haue your choyfe. Consider brother you are yong, then plod not altogether in meditating on our fathers precepts: which howsoever they fauoured of profit, were mozt vnfauerly to one of your yeeres applied. You must not thinke but certaine Marchants of this Citie, expect your company, sundry Gentlemen
desire your familiarity, and by converfing with fuch, you will be accounted a Gentleman: otherwise a pefant, if ye liue thus obscurely. Befides, which I had almost forgot, and then had all the rest beene nothing, you are a man by nature furnisshed with all exquifite proportion, worthy the loue of any courtly Ladie, be she neuer fo amorous: you haue wealth to maintaine her, of women not little longed for: wordes to court her you hall not want, for my selfe will be your secretary. Brieflie, why ftrade I to diftinguife abilitie in particularities, when in one word it may be fayde, which no man can gainsay, Lucanio lacketh nothing to delight a wife, nor any thing but a wife to delight him? My young maifter beeing thus clawde, and puft vp with his owne prayfe, made no longer delay, but hauing on his holyday hofe, he tricked himfelfe vp, and like a fellowe that meant good footh, hee clapped his Brother on the Shoul-der, and fayde. Faith Brother Roberto, and yee fay the worde, lets go feeke a wife while it is hote, both of vs toghither. Ile pay well, and I dare turne you loofe to fay as well as anye of them all: well Ile doe my beft, faid Roberto, and since ye are fo forward, lets goe nowe and trie our good fortune.

With this foutheon they walke, and Roberto went direftlie towarde the houfe where Lamilia (for fo we see call the Curtezan) kept her Hospital, which was
in the Suburbes of the Cittie, pleasautly seat'd, and made more delectable by a pleasautn Garden, wherein it was situate. No sooner come they within ken, but Mistresse Lamilia like a cunning angler made readie her chaunge of baytes, that shee might effect Lucanios bane: and to begin, shee discouered from her window her beauteous inticing face, and taking a lute in her had that / she might the rather allure, she fung this Sonnet with a delicious voice.

Lamiales Song.

Fie fie on blind fancie,
It hinders youths ioy:
Faire virgins learne by me,
To count loue a toy.

When Loue learned first the A B C of delight,
And knew no figures, nor conceited phrase:
He simplie gaue to due desert her right,
He led not louers in darke winding wayes:
He plainly wild to loue, or flatly answered no,
But now who lifts to proue, shall find it nothing
Fie fie then on fancie,
It hinders youths ioy,
Faire virgins learne by me,
To count loue a toy.
For since he learnt to use the Poets pen,
He learnt likewise with smoothing words to faine,
Witching chaste ears with trothless tongues of men,
And wrody faith with falsehood and disdaine.

He gives a promise now, anon he sweareth no,
Who listeth for to prove, shall find his changings

Fie fie then on fancy
It hinders youth[s] joy,
Faire virgins learn by me,
To count loue a toy.

While this painted sepulchre was shadowing her
corrupting guilt, Hiena-like alluring to destruction,
Roberto and Lucanio vnder the windowe, kept
euen pace with euerie stop of her instrument, but
especially my yong Ruffler, (that before time like
a bird in a cage, had beene prentise for three lies
or one and twentie yeeres at leaft, to esteame
Auarice his deceased father) O twas a world to see
how he sometime simperd it, striving to set a countenace
on his turnd face, that it might seeme of
wainscot proofe, to beholde her face without blushing:
anone he would stroake his bow-bent-leg, as
though he went to shoote loue arrows from his
shins: then wipte his chin (for his beard was not
yet grown) with a gold wrought handkercher,
whence of purpofe he let fall a handful of angels.
This golden showre was no sooner rained, but
Lamil[a], ceasst her song, and Roberto (affuring himselfe the foole was caught) came to Lucanio (that stoode now as one that had stare Medusa in the face) and awaked him from his amazement with these words. What in a draunce brother? whence springs these dumps? are yee amazed at this obieét? or long ye to become loues subieét? Is there not difference betweene this delectable life, and the imprisonement you haue all your life hitherto endured? If the sight and hearing of this harmonious beautie work in you effects of wonder, what will the possession of so divine an essence, wherein beautie and Art dwell in their perfection excellencie. Brother said Lucanio, lets vs few words, and she be no more then a woman, I trust youle helpe mee to her? and if you doe, well, I say no more, but I am yours till death vs depart, and what is mine shal be yours, world without end, Amen.

Roberto smiling at his simplenesse, helpt him to gather vp his dropt golde, and without any more circumstance led him to Lamilias house: for such places it may be said as of hell.

Noles atque dies patet atria ianua ditis.

So their dooress are euer open to entice youth to destruction. They were no sooner entred, but Lamilia her selfe, like a second Helen, court like
begins to salute Roberto, yet did her wandring eie
glance often at Lucanio: the effect of her enter-
tainment consisted in these tearmes, that to her
simple house Signor Roberto was welcome, and his
brother the better welcome for your sake: albeit
his good report confirmed by his present demeaner,
were of it selfe enough to give him deserved enter-
tainment, in any place how honourable soever:
mutuall thanks returned, they lead this prodigal
childe into a Parlor, garnished with goodly por-
tratures of amiable personages: neere which, an
excellent confert of musicke began at their entrance
to play. Lamilia seeing Lucanio shamefaft, tooke
him by the hand, and tenderly wringing him, vsed
these words. Beleeue me Gentlemen, I am verie
forie that our rude enter[tain]ment is such, as no
way may worke your content: for this I haue noted
since your first entering, that your countenance
hath beene heauie, and the face being the glasse
of the heart, affures me the same is not quiet:
would ye wish any thing heere that might content
you, fay but the word, and assure ye of present
deliuerance to effect your full delight. Lucanio
being so farre in loue, as he perswaded himselfe
without her grant hee could not liue, had a good
meaning to vtter his minde, but wanting fit wordes,
hee floode like a trewant that lackt a prompter,
or a plaier that being out of his part at his first
entrance, is faine to haue the booke to speake what he should performe. Which Roberto perceiuing replied thus in his behalfe. Madame, the Sunnes brightnesse daifleth the beholders eies, the maieftie of Gods, / amazed humane men. Tullie Prince of Orators, once fainted though his caufe were good, and he that tamed monssters, stoode amated at beauties ornaments: Then blame not this yoong man though hee replied not, for he is blinded with the beautie of your funne-darkening eies, made mute with the celeftiall organe of your voyce, and feare of that rich ambush of amber colored darts, whose pointes are leuelde against his heart. Well Signor Roberto faide shee, how euer you interpret their sharpe leuell, be sure they are not bent to doe him hurt, and but that modestie blindes vs poore Maidens from uttering the inwarde forrowe of our mindes, perchaunce the caufe of greefe is ours, how euer men do colour, for as I am a virgin I protest (and therewithall shee tainted her cheekes with a vermilion blush) I neuer sawe Gentleman in my life in my eie, so gratious as is Lucanio, onely that is my greefe, that either I am despifed for that he scornes to speake, or else (which is my greater sorrow) I feare he cannot speake. Not speake Gentlewoman quoth Lucanio? that were a ieaff indeede: yes, I thanke God I am founde of winde and lim, onely my heart is not as it was
woont: but and you be as good as your word, that will soone be well, and so crauing ye of more acquaintance, in token of my plaine meaning receive this diamond, which my olde father loued deereley: and with that deliuered her a Ring, wherein was apointed a Diamond of wonderfull worth. Which shee accepting with a lowe conge, returned him a filke Riband for a fauour, tyed with a truelouers knot, which he fastened vnder a faire Jewell on his Beuer felt.

After this *Diamedis & Glauci permutatio*, my young master waxed cranke, and the musicke continuing, was very forward in dauncing, to shew his cunning: and so desiring them to play on a hornepipe, laid on the pauement luftily with his leaden heele, coruetting like a steede of Signor Roccoes teaching, and wanted nothing but bels, to bee a hobbyhorse in a morrice. Yet was he soothe in his folly, and what euer he did, Lamilia counted excellent: her praise made him proude, insomuch that if he had not beene intreated, hee would rather haue died in his daunce, then left off to shew his mistresse delight. At last reasoonably perswaded, seeing the table furnisshed, he was contented to cease, and settel himselfe to his viuitals, on which (hauing before labored) he fed luftily, especially of a Woodcocke pie, wherewith Lamilia his caruer, plentifully plied him. Full dishes
hauing furnisht emptie stomaches, and Lucanio thereby got leisur to talke, falles to discouer of his wealth, his lands, his bonds, his abilitie, and how himselfe with all he had, was at Madame Lamillas disposing: desiring her afore his brother, to tell him simply what shee meant. Lamilia repliued. My sweet Lucanio, how I esteeme of thee mine eies doe witnesse, that like handmaids, haue attended thy beautious face, euuer since I first beheld thee: yet seeing loue that lafteth gathereth by degrees his liking, let this for that suffice: if I finde thee firme, Lamilia will be faithfull: if fleeting, shee must of necessitie be infortunat that hauing never seene any whome before shee could affect, shee shoule bee of him inuirously forfaken. Nay saide Lucanio, I dare say my brother here will giue his word, for that I accept your own saide Lamilia, for with me your credit is better then your brothers. Roberto brake off their amorous prattle with these speeches. Sith either of you are of other so fond at the first sight, I doubt not but time will make your loue more firme. Yet madame Lamilia although my brother and you be thus forward, some crose chaunce may come: for Multa cadunt inter calicem supremaq. labe. And for a warning to teach you both wit, Ile tell you an olde wiuers tale.

Before ye go on with your tale (quoth mistresse
120

GREENES

Lamilia) let me giue ye a caueat by the way, which shall be figured in a Fable.

Lamiliaes Tale.

The Foxe on a time came to visite the Gray, partly for kindered, cheefely for craft: and finding the hole emptie of all other companie, sauing onely one Badger, enquiring th caufe of his solitarinesse, he described the sodaine death of his dam and fire, with the rest of his consorts. The Foxe made a Friday face, counterfeiting sorrow: but concluding that deaths shake was vneuitable, perfwaded him to seeke some fit mate wherwith to match. The Badger soone agreed: so forth they went, and in their way met with a wanton ewe straggling from the fold: the Foxe bad the Badger play the tall tripling, and strout on his tiptoes: for (quoth he) this ewe is lady of al these lands, and her brother cheefe belweather of fundrie flocks. To be short, by the Foxes permifion there would be a perpetuall league, betweene her harmelesse kindred, and al other deouring beafts, for that the Badger was to them all allied: seduced, shee yeelded: and the Foxe conducted them to the Badgers / habitation. Where drawing her aside vnder color of exhortation, pulde out her throate to satisfe his greedie thurst. Here I shoule note, a yoong whelpe that
viewed their walke, informed the shepheard of what hapned. They followed, and trained the Foxe and Badger to the hole: the Foxe afore had craftily conuained himself away: the shepheard found the Badger rauing for the ewes murther: his lamentation being helde for counterfet, was by the shepheards dog wearied. The Foxe escaped: the ewe was spoiled, and euer since betweene the Badgers and the dogges, hath con-
tinued a mortall enmitie: And now be aduised Roberto (quoth she) goe forward with your tale, seeke not by slie insinuation to turne our mirth to sorrow. Go too Lamilia (quoth hee) you feare what I meane not, but how euer ye take it, Ile forward with my tale.

Robertoes Tale.

In the North parts there dwelt an old Squier, that had a yong daughter his heire; who had (as I know Madame Lamilia you haue had) many youthfull Gentlemen that long time sued to obtaire her loue. But she knowing her owne perfection (as women are by nature proude) woulde not to any of them vouchsafe fauour: infomuch that they perceiving her relentlesse, shewed themselves not altogether witlesse, but left her to her fortune, when they founde her
frowardnesse. At laft it fortuned among other strangers, a Farmers sonne visited her fathers house: on whom at the first sight shee was enamored, he likewise on hir. Tokens of loue past betweene them, either acquainted others parents of their choife, and they kindly gaue their consent. Short tale to make, married they were, and great solemnitie was at the wedding feast. A yong Gentleman, that had beene long a suiter to her, vexing that the sonne of a farmer shoulde be so preferred, cast in his minde by what meanes (to marre their merriment) he might steale away the Bride. Hereupon he consults with an old beldam, called mother Gunby, dwelling thereby, whose counsell having taken, he fell to his practife, and proceeded thus. In the after noone, when dauncers were very busie, he takes the Bride by the hand, and after a turne or two, tells her in her eare, he had a secret to impart vnto her, appointing her in any wise, in the euening to find a time to confer with him: she promised she would and so they parted. Then goes he to the bridegrome, and with protestations of entire affect, protests that the great sorrow hee takes at that which he must utter, whereon depended his especial credit, if it were knowne the matter by him should be discovered. After the bridegromes promise of secrecie, the gentleman tells him, that a friend of
his receiued that morning from \^ she bride a letter, wherein she willed him with some sixtene horse to awaite her comming at a Parke stide, for that she detested him in her heart as a base country hinde, with whom her father compelled her to marrie. The bridegroome almoft out of his wits, began to bite his lippe. Nay faith the Gentleman, if you will by me be aduised, you shall faue her credit, win her by kindnes, and yet preuent her wanton complot. As how said the Bridegroome? Mary thus said the gentleman: In the euening (for till the guefts be gone she intends not to gad) get you / on horfepacke, and feeme to be of the companie that attends her comming: I am appointed to bring her from the house to the Parke, and from thence fetch a winding compasse of a mile about, but to turne vnto olde mother Gunbyes house, where her louer my friend abides: when she alights, I wil conduct her to a chamber far from his lodging, but when the lights are out, and she expects her adulterous copesmate, your selle (as reafon is) shall proue her bedfellow, where priately you may reprooue her, and in the morning early returne home without trouble. As for the gentleman my frend, I will excufe her absence to him, by saying, shee mockt thee with her maide in sted of her selle, whom when I knew at her lighting, I disdained to bring her vnto
his presence. The Bridegroome gaue his hand it should be so.

Now by the way we must vnderstand, this mother *Gunby* had a daughter, who all that day fate heavilie at home with a willow garland, for that the bridegroome (if he had dealt faithfully) shouild haue wedded her before any other. But men (*Lamilia*) are vnconstant, mony now a daies makes the match, or else the match is marde.

But to the matter: the bride groome and the Gentleman thus agreed: he tooke his time, conferred with the bride, perswaded her that her husband (notwithstanding his faire shew at the marriage) had sworne to his old sweete heart, their neighbour *Gunbyes* daughter, to be that night her bedfellow: and if she would bring her father, his father, and other friends to the house at midnight, they should finde it so.

At this the yong gentlewoman inwardly vext to be by a peasant so abused, promised if she sawe likelyhood of his slipping away, that then she would doe according as he directed.

All this thus sorting, the old womans daughter was trickly attired, ready to furnish this pageant, for her old mother promisef all things necessarie.

Well, Supper paft, dauncing ended, all the guests would home, and the Bridgroome pretending to bring some friend of his home, got his horfe, and
to the Parke side he rode, and stayed with the horsemen that attended the Gentleman.

Anone came Marian like mistres Bride, and mounted behind the gentleman, away they post, fetch their compasse, & at last alight at an olde wiuers house, where sodenly she is conuaied to her chamber, & the bridegroome sent to keepe her company: where he had scarce devised how to begin his exhortation, but the father of his bride knockt at the chamber doore. At which being somewhat amazed, yet thinking to turne it to a ieast, sith his wife (as he thought) was in bed with him, hee opened the doore, saying: Father, you are heartily welcome, I wonder how you found vs out heere; this devise to remoue our selues, was with my wiuers content, that we might rest quietly without the Maids and Batchelers disturbing vs. But where is your wife said y gentleman? why heere in bed said he. I thought (quoth the other) my daughter had beene your wife, for sure I am to day hee was giuen you in marriage. You are merrily disposed said the Bridegroome, what, thinke you I haue another wife? I thinke but as you speake, quoth the gentleman, for my daughter is below, & you say your wife is in the bed. Below (said he) you are a merie man, and with that casting on a night gowne, he went downe, where when he saw his
wife, the gentleman his father, and a number of his friends assembled, he was so confounded, that how to behaue himselfe he knew not; onely hee cried out that he was deceiued. At this the olde woman arises, and making her selfe ignorant of al the whole matter, enquires the caufe of that sodaine tumult. When she was tolde the new bridegrome was found in bed with her daughter, she exclaimed against so great an injurie. Marian was called in quorum: she iustified it was by his allurement: he being condemned by al their consents, was iudged vnworthy to haue the gentle-woman vnto his wife, & compelled (for escaping of punishment) to marrie Marian: and the yong Gentleman (for his care in discovering the farmers fonnes leudnes) was recompenst with the Gentle-womans euer during loue.

Quoth Lamilia, and what of this? Nay nothing faide Roberto, but that I haue told you the effects of sodaine loue: yet the best is, my brother is a maidenly batcheler, and for your selfe, you haue beene troubled with many suters. The fewer the better, saide Lucanio. But brother, I con you little thanke for this tale: hereafter I pray you vse other table talke. Lets then end talk, quoth Lamiliá, and you (signor Lucanio) and I will goe to the Cheffe. To Cheffe, said he, what meane you by that? It is a game, said she, that the
first danger is but a checke, the worst, the giving of a mate. Wel, said Roberto, that game ye haue beene at alreadie then, for you checkt him first with your beauty, & gave your self for mate to him by your bountie. That is wel taken brother, said Lucanio, so haue we past our game at Cheffe. Wil ye play at tables then, said she? I cannot, quoth he, for I can goe no furder with my game, if I be once taken. Will ye play then at cards? I, said he, if it be at one and thirtie. That fooles game, said she? Weele all to hazard, said Roberto and brother you shall make one for an houre or two: contented quoth he. So to dice they went, and fortune so fauoured Lucanio, that while they continued square play, he was no looser. Anone cosmosage came about, and his Angels being double winged flew cleane from before him. Lamiliá being the winner, prepared a banquet; which finished, Roberto aduised his brother to depart home, and to furnish himselfe with more crowns, leaft he were outcrakt with new commers.

Lucanio loath to be outcountenanft, followed his aduise, desiring to attend his returne, which he before had determined vnrequestfed: for as soone as his brothers backe was turned, Roberto begins to reckon with Lamilia, to bee a sharer as well in the mony deceitfully woone, as in the
Diamond so wilfully giuen. But she, \textit{secundum mores meretricis}, iested thus with the scholler. Why \textit{Roberto}, are you so well read, and yet shew your selfe so shallow witted, to deeme women so weake of conceit, that they see not into mens demerites? Suppose (to make you my f tale to catch the woodcocke, your brother) that my tongue ouerrunning mine intent, I spake of liberal rewarde; but what I promis'd, there is the point; at least what I part with, I will be well aduised. It may be you wil thus rea'on: Had not \textit{Roberto} trained \textit{Lucanio} with \textit{Lamilias} lure, \textit{Lucanio} had not now beene \textit{Lamilias} pray: therfore fith by \textit{Roberto} she poñsesth her prize, \textit{Roberto} merites an equall part. Monstrous absurdy if so you rea'on; as wel you may rea'on thus: \textit{Lamilias} dog hath kilde her a deere, therefore his mis'tris must make him a pastie. No poore pennileffe Poet, thou art beguilde in me, and yet I wonder how thou couldest, thou haft beene so often beguilde. But it fareth with licentious men, as with the chafed bore in the /streame, who being greatly refreshed with swimming, neuer feeleth any smart vntill he peris'h recurelesly wounded with his owne weapons. Reasonleffe \textit{Roberto}, that haung but a brokers place, asked a lenders reward. Faithleffe \textit{Roberto}, that haft attempted to betray thy brother, irre-ligiously forsaken thy wife, desueredly beene in
thy fathers eie an abie\textsuperscript{c}t: thinkest thou Lamilia so
loose, to confort with one so lewd? No hypocrite, 
the sweete Gentleman thy brother, I will till death 
loue, and thee while I liue loath. This share 
Lamilia giues thee, other gettest thou none.

As Roberto would haue replied, Lucanio ap-
proached: to whom Lamilia discours\textsuperscript{f}t the whole 
deceit of his brother, & neuer rested intimating 
malitious arguments, till Lucanio vtterly refused 
Roberto for his brother, and for euer forbade him 
of his house. And when he wold haue yeelded 
reasons, and formed excuse, Lucanios impatience 
(vrged by her importunate malice) forbade all 
reasoning with them that was reasonlesse, and so 
giving him Jacke Drums entertainment, shut him 
out of doores: whom we will follow, and leave 
Lucanio to the mercie of Lamilia. Roberto in 
an extreame extasie rent his haire, curst his 
destinie, blamed his trecherie, but most of all 
exclaimed against Lamilia: and in her against all 
enticing Curtizans in these tearmes.

What meant the Poets to inuen\textsuperscript{t}tue verse, 
To sing Medeas shame, and Scillas pride, 
Calipsoes charmes, by which so many dide? 
Onely for this, their vices they rehearse, 
That curious wits which in this world conuerse, 
May shun the dangers and enticing shoes,
Of such false Syrens, those home-breeding foes,
That from their eies their venim do disperse.
So soone kils not the Basiliske with fight,
The Vipers tooth is not so venomous,
The Adders tung not halfe so dangerous,
As they that beare the shadow of delight,
Who chaine blinde youths in tramels of their haire,
Till waft bring woe, and sorrow haft despaire.

With this he laide his head on his hand, and leant his elbow on the ground sighing out sadly,

_Heu patior telis vulnera facta meis._

On the other side of the hedge fate one that heard his sorrow, who getting ouer, came towards him, and brake off his passion. When he approched, he saluted _Roberto_ in this sort.

Gentleman quoth hee (for so you seeme) I haue by chaunce heard you discourse some part of your greese; which appeareth to be more then you will discouer, or I can conceipt. But if you vouchsafe such simple comfort as my abilitie will yeeld, assure your selfe, that I will endeuour to doe the best, that either may procure your profit, or bring you pleasure: the rather, for that I suppose you are a scholler, and pittie it is men of learning shoule diue in lacke.

_Roberto_ wondring to heare such good words,
for that this iron age affoordes few that esteeme of vertue; returned him thankfull gratulations, and (urged by necessitie) vttered his present griefe, befeeching his aduise how he might be imployed. Why, easily, quoth hee, and greatly to your benefit: for men of my profession get by schollers their whole liuing. What is your profession, sayd Roberto? Truely sir said he, I am a player. A Player, quoth Roberto, I tooke you rather for a gentleman of great liuing, for if by outward habit men shuld be cenfured, I tell you, you would be taken for a substantiall man. So am I where I dwell (quoth the player) reputed able at my proper cost, to build a Windmill. What though the worlde once went hard with mee, when I was faine to carrie my playing Fardle a footebacke; Tempora mutantur, I know you know the meaning of it better then I, but I thus confider it; it is otherwise now; for my very share in playing apparrrell will not be folde for two hundred pounds. Truely (said Roberto) it is strange, that you should so prosper in that vaine practise, for that it seemes to me your voyce is nothing gracious. Nay then, said the player, I mislike your iudgement: why, I am as famous for Delphrigus, and the king of Fairies, as euer was any of my time. The twelue labors of Hercules haue I terribly thundred on the stage, and placed
three scenes of the devil on the highway to heaven. Have ye so (said Roberto?) then I pray you pardon me. Nay more (quoth the player) I can serve to make a prettie speech, for I was a countrie Author, passing at a morall, for it was I that pende the Moral of mans wit, the Dialogue of Diues, and for seaven yeeres space was absolute interpreter of the puppets. But now my Almanacke is out of date.

The people make no estimation,
Of Morrals teaching education.

Was not this prettie for a plaine rime extem-pore? if ye will ye shall haue more. Nay it is enough, said Roberto, but how meane you to use mee? Why sir, in making playes, said the other, for which you shall be well paiied, if you will take the paines.

Roberto perceiuing no remedie, thought best to respect of his present necessity, to trie his wit; & went with him willingly: who lodged him at the townes end in a house of retaile, where what happened our Poet, you shall / heereafter heare. There by conuersing with bad company, he grew A malo in peius, falling from one vice to another, and so having found a vaine to finger crownes, he grew cranker then Lucanio, who by this time began to droope, being thus dealt withall by
Lamilia. She having bewitched him with her enticing wiles, caused him to confume in leffe then two yeares, that infinite treasure gathered by his father, with so many a poore mans curfe. His lands fold, his iewels pawnd, his money wafted, he was caffeerd by Lamilia that had coofened him of all. Then walked he like one of duke Humfeyes Squires, in a thredebare cloake, his hofe drawne out with his heeles, his shooes vnfeamed, left his feete shou'd sweate with heate: now (as witleffe as he was) hee remembred his fathers words, his kindnes to his brother, his carelefneffe of himfelfe. In this sorrow hee fate downe on pennileffe bench; where when Opus and Vfus told him by the chimes in his ftomacke, it was time to fall vnto meate, he was faine with the Camelion to feed vpon the aire, & make patience his beft repaft.

While he was at his feast, Lamilia came flaunting by, garnifh'd with the iewels whereof she beguiled him: which figh't ferved to clofe his stomacke after his cold cheere. Roberto hearing of his brothers beggerie, albeit he had little remorfe of his misefable state, yet did he fecke him out, to vfe him as a propertie, whereby Lucanio was somewhat prouided for. But being of fimple nature, hee ferved but for a blocke to whet Robertoes wit on: which the poore foole
perceiving, he forsooke all other hopes of life, and fell to be a notorious Pandar: in which detested course hee continued till death. But Roberto now famozed for an Arch-plaimaking-poet, his purse like the sea sometime sweld, anon like the same sea fell to a low ebbe; yet seldom he wanted, his labors were so well esteemed. Marry this rule he kept, what euer he fingerd aforehand, was the certaine meanes to vnbinde a bargaine, and being asked why he so sleightly dealt with them that did him good? It becomes me, sa[i]th hee, to be contrarie to the worlde, for commonly when vulgar men receiue earneft, they doe performe, when I am paid any thing afore-hand, I breake my promise. He had shift of lodgings, where in euery place his Hostesse writ vp the wofull remembrance of him, his laundresse, and his boy; for they were euer his in houfhold, beside retainers in sundry other places. His companie were lightly the lewdeft persons in the land, apt for pilferie, periurie, forgerie, or any villanie. Of these hee knew the cafts to cog at Cards, coofin at Dice: by these he learned the legerdemaines of nips, foysters, connicatchers, crosbyters, lifts, high Lawyers, and all the rabble of that vncleane generation of vipers: and pithily could he paint out their whole courses of craft: So cunning he was in all crafts, as nothing refted
in him almost but craftinesse. How often the 
Gentlewoman his wife laboured vainely to recall 
him, is lamentable to note: but as one giuen ouer 
to all lewdnes, he communicated her sorrowful 
lines among his loose truls, that iefted at her 
bootelesse laments. If he could any way get 
credite on scores, he would then brag his 
creditors carried ftones, comparing euerie round 
circle to a groning O, procured by a painful 
burden. The shamefull ende of sundry his con-
forts, deseruedly punished for their amisfe, wrought 
no compunction in his heart: of which one, 
brother to a Brothell he kept, was truft vnder 
a tree as round as a Ball.

To some of his swearing companions thus it 
happened /: A crue of them fitting in a Tauerne 
carowfing, it fortuned an honest Gentleman, and 
his friend, to enter their roome: fome of them 
being acquainted with him, in's their domineering 
drunken vaine, would haue no nay, but downe 
he muft needes fitte with them; beeing placed, 
no remedie there was, but he muft needes keep 
euen compaffe with their vnfeemely carowfing. 
Which he refusing, they fell from high wordes 
to found frokes, fo that with much adoe the 
Gentleman faued his owne, and shifted from 
their company. Being gone, one of these tiplers 
forsooth lackt a gold Ring, the other sware they
fee the Gentleman take it from his hande. Upon this the Gentleman was indited before a Judge: these honest men are deposed: whose wisedome weighing the time of the braule, gaue light to the Iury what power wine-washing poyson had: they according vnto conscience, found the Gentleman not guiltie, and God released by that verdict the innocent.

With his accusers thus it fared: one of them for murther was worthily executed: the other neuer since prospered: the third, sitting not long after upon a lustie horse, the beast suddenly died vnnder him: God amend the man.

Roberto euerie day acquainted with these examples, was notwithstanding nothing bettered, but rather hardened in wickednesse. At last was that place iustified, God warneth men by dreams and visions in the night, and by knowne examples in the day, but if he returne not, hee comes upon him with judgement that shall bee felt. For now when the number of deceites caused Roberto bee hatefull almoost to all men, his immeasurablie drinking had made him the perfect Image of the dropsie, and the loathsome scourge of Luft, tyrannized in his loues: living in extreame pouerty, and hauing nothing to pay but chalke, which now his Host accepted not for currant, this miserable man lay comfortlessely languishing,
hauing but one groat left (the iuft proportiō of his fathers Legacie) which looking on, he cried: O now it is too late, too late to buy witte with thee: and therefore will I see if I can fell to carelesse youth what I negligently forgot to buy.

Heere (Gentlemen) breake I off Roberto's speech; whose life in most parts agreeing with mine, found one selfe punishment as I haue doone. Heereafter suppose me the said Roberto, and I will goe on with that hee promised: Greene will send you now his groatsworth of wit, that neuer shewed a mitesworth in his life: and though no man now be by, to doe me good, yet ere I die, I will by my repentance indevor to doe all men good.

Deceiuing world, that with alluring toyes,
Haft made my life the subiect of thy scorne:
And scorneft now to lend thy fading ioyes,
To lengthen my life, whom friends haue left forlorn.

How well are they that die ere they be borne,
And neuer see thy sleights, which few men shun,
Till vnawares they helpleffe are vndon.

Oft haue I sung of loue, and of his fire,
But now I finde that Poet was aduizde;
Which made full feasfts increasers of desife,
And prooues weake loue was with the poore despizde.
For when the life with foode is not suffizde,
What thoughts of loue, what motion of delight;
What pleasance can proceede from such a wight?/

Witnifie my want the murderer of my wit,
My rauisht sense of woonted furie reft;
Wants such conceit, as shou'd in Poims fit,
Set downe the sorrow wherein I am left:
But therefore haue high heauens their gifts bereft:
Because fo long they lent them me to vfe,
And I so long their bountie did abuse.

O that a yeare were graunted me to liue,
And for that yeare my former wits restorde:
What rules of life, what counsell would I giue?
How shou'd my sinne with sorrow then deplore?
But I must die of euery man abhorde.
Time loosely spent will not againe be woonne,
My time is loosely spent, and I vndone.

O horrenda fames, how terrible are thy assaułtes?
but Vermis conscientiæ, more wounding are thy stings. Ah Gentlemen, that liue to reade my broken and confused lines, looke not I shou'd (as I was woont) delight you with vain fantasies, but gather my follies altogether, and as you would
deale with so many parricides, cast them into the
fire: call them Telegones, for now they kill their
father, and euerie lewd line in them written, is
a deep piercing wound to my heart; euery idle
houre spent by any in reading them, brings a million
of sorrowes to my soule. O that the teares of a
miserable man (for neuer any man was yet. more
miserable) might wash their memorie out with my
death; and that those works with me together
might be interd. But fith they cannot, let this
my laft worke witnes against them with me, how
I deteft them. Blacke is the remembrance of my
blacke works, blacker then night, blacker / then
death, blacker then hell.

Learne wit by my repentance (Gentlemen) and
let these fewe rules following be regarded in your
liues.

1. First in all your actions set God before your
eyes; for the feare of the Lord is the beginning
of wisedome: Let his word be a lanterne to
your feete, and a light vnto your paths, then shall
you stand as firme rocks, and not be mocked.

2. Beware of looking backe: for God will not
be mocked; of him that hath receiued much,
much shall be demanded.

3. If thou be fingle, and canst abstaine, turne
thy eyes from vanitie, for there is a kinde of
women bearing the faces of Angels, but the hearts
of Deuils, able to intrap the elect if it were possible.

4. If thou be married, forfake not the wife of thy youth, to follow strange flesh; for whoremongers and adulterers the Lord will judge. The doore of a Harlot leadeth downe to death, and in her lips there dwels destruction; her face is decked with odors, but shee bringeth a man to a morseall of bread and nakednesse: of which myselfe am instance.

5. If thou be left rich, remember those that want, and so deale, that by thy wilfulnes thy self want not: Let not Tauerners and Viuallers be thy Executors; for they will bring thee to a dishonorable graue.

6. Oppresse no man, for the crie of the wronged ascendeth to the eares of the Lord: neither delight to encrease by Ufurie, leaft thou loose thy habitation in the euerafting Tabernacle.

7. Beware of building thy house to thy neighbours hurt; for the stones will crie to the timber; We were laide together in bloud: and those that so erect houses, calling them by their names, shall lie in the graue like sheepe, and death shall gnaw vpon their soules.

8. If thou be poore, be also patient, and strive not to grow rich by indirect meanes; for goods so gotten shall vanish away like smoke.
9. If thou be a father, master, or teacher, joyn good examples with good counsaile; else little auailc precepts, where life is different.

10. If thou be a sonne or servuant, despise not reproofe; for though correction be bitter at the first, it bringeth pleasure in the end.

Had I regarded the first of these rules, or beene obedient at the last: I had not now at my last ende, beene left thus desolate. But now, though to my selue I giue Consilium post facta; yet to others they may serue for timely precepts. And therefore (while life giues leave) will send warning to my olde conforits, which haue liued as losely as myselue, albeit weakenesse will scarce suffer me to write, yet to my fellowe Schollers about this Cittie, will I direct these few insuing lines.

To those Gentlemen his Quondam acquaintance, that spend their wits in making Playes, R. G. wisheth a better exercize, and wisedome to prevent his extremities.

If wofull experience may moue you (Gentlemen) to beware, or vnheard of wretchednes intreate you to take heed: I doubt not but you will looke backe with sorrow on your time past, and endeuer with repentance to spend that which is to come. Wonder not, (for with thee wil I first
begin), thou famous gracer of Tragedians, that Greene, who hath said with thee like the fool / in his heart, There is no God, shou'd now giue glorie vnto his greatneffe: for penetratiing is his power, his hand lies heauie vpon me, he hath spoken vnto me with a voice of thunder, and I haue felt he is a God that can punish enimies. Why shoud thy excellent wit, his gift, be so blinded, that thou shouldest giue no glory to the giuer? Is it peftil-ent Machiuiilian pollicie that thou haft studied? O puni fh follie! What are his rules but meere confused mockeries, able to extirpate in small time, the generation of mankinde. For if Sic volo, sic iubeo, hold in those that are able to command: and if it be lawfull Fas & nefas to doe any thing that is beneficall, onely Tyrants shou'd possess the earth, and they striving to excedee in tyranny, shou'd each to other bee a slaughter man; till the mightieft outliuing all, one stroke were left for Death, that in one age man's life shou'd ende. The brother of this Diabolicall Atheifme is dead, and in his life had neuer the felicitie he aimed at: but as he began in craft, liued in feare, and ended in despaire. Quam inscrutabilia sunt Dei iudicia? This murderer of many brethren, had his conscience feared like Caine: this betrayer of him that gaue his life for him, inherited the portion of Judas: this Apostata perished as ill as Iulian: and wilt thou my friend
be his Disciple? Looke vnto me, by him perfwaded to that libertie, and thou shalt finde it an infernall bondage. I knowe the leaft of my demerits merit this miserable death, but wilfull struing against knowne truth, exceedeth al the terrors of my soule. Defer not (with me) till this laft point of extremitie; for little knowest thou how in the end thou shalt be visited.

With thee I ioyne young Iuuenall, that byting Satyrift, that laftlie with mee together writ a Comedie. Sweete / boy, might I aduise thee, be aduised, and get not many enemies by bitter words: inueigh against vaine men, for thou canst do it, no man better, no man so wel: thou haft a libertie to reprooue all, and none more; for one being spoken to, all are offended, none being blamed no man is injured. Stop shallow water still running, it will rage, tread on a worme and it will turne: then blame not schollers vexed with sharpe lines, if they reprooue thy too much libertie of reproofe.

And thou no lesse deseruing then the other two, in some things rarer, in nothing inferiour; driuen (as my selfe) to extreame shifts, a little haue I to say to thee: and were it not an idolatrous oth, I would sweare by sweet S. George, thou art vnworthie better hap, fith thou dependest on so meane a stay. Bafe minded men al three of you, if by my miserie ye be not warned: for vnto none of you (like me)
fought those burres to cleaue: those Puppits (I meane) that speake from our mouths, those Anticks garnisht in our colours. Is it not strange that I, to whom they al haue beene beholding: is it not like that you, to whome they all haue beene beholding, shall (were ye in that cafe that I am now) be both at once of them forsaken? Yes truft them not: for there is an vpstart Crow, beautified with our feathers, that with his Tygers heart wrapt in a Players hide, supposes he is as well able to bumbaft out a blanke verse as the best of you: and being an absolute Johannes fac totum, is in his owne conceit the onely Shake-scene in a countrie. O that I might intreate your rare wits to be imploied in more profitable courses: & let those Apes imitate your past excellence, and neuer more acquaint them with your admired inuentions. I know the best husband of you all will neuer proue an Usurer, and the kindest of them / all will neuer prooue a kinde nurse: yet whilft you may, seeke you better Maifters; for it is pittie men of such rare wits, should be subieqt to the pleasures of such rude gownes.

In this I might insert two more, that both haue writ against these buckram Gentlemen: but let their owne works serue to witnesse against their owne wickednesse, if they perfeuer to mainteine any more such peafants. For other new commers, I leaue
them to the mercie of these painted monsters, who
(I doubt not) will drive the best minded to despise
them: for the rest, it skils not though they make
a ieast at them.

But now returne I againe to you [t]hree, knowing my miserie is to you no news: and let
me heartily intreate you to bee warned by my
harmes. Delight not (as I haue done) in irre-
ligious oaths; for from the blasphemers house,
a curse shall not depart. Despise drunkenesses,
which wasteth the wit, and maketh men all equal
unto beasts. Flie luft, as the deathfman of the
sole, and defile not the Temple of the holy
ghost. Abhorre those Epicures, whose loose
life hath made religion lothsome to your eares:
and when they sooth you with tearmes of Master-
ship, remember Robert Greene, whome they haue
so often flattered, perishes now for want of
comfort. Remember gentlemen, your liues are
like so many lighted Tapers, that are with care
deliuered to all of you to maintaine: these with
wind-puft wrath may be extinguisht, which
drunkenesses put out, which negligence let fall:
for mans time of itsefle is not so short, but it
is more shortened by sin. The fire of my light
is now at the laft snuffe, and the want of wher-
with to sustaine it, there is no substance left for
life to feede on. Trust not then (I beseech yee)
to such weake ftaies: for they / are as changeable in minde, as in many attires. Well, my hand is tired, and I am forst to leaue where I would begin; for a whole booke cannot containe these wrongs, which I am forst to knit vp in some few lines of words.

Desirous that you should liverse, though
himselfe be dying,
Robert Greene.

Now to all men I bid farewell in this fort, with this conceited Fable of the olde Comedian Æsop.

An Ant and a Graftopper walking together on a greene, the one carelesely skipping, the other carefully prying what winters prouision was scattered in the way: the Graftopper scorning (as wantons wil) this needeleffe thrift (as he tearmed it) reprooued him thus:

The greedie miser thirfteth still for gaine;
His thirft is theft, his weale works others woe:
That foole is fond which will in caues remaine,
When mongst faire sweetes he may at pleasure goe.

To this the Ant perceiving the Graftoppers meaning, quickly replied:

The thirftie husband spares what unthirfts spends,
His thirft no theft, for dangers to provide:
Trust to thy selfe, small hope in want yeeld friendes,
A cause is better then the desarts wide.

In short time these two parted, the one to his pleasure / the other to his labour. Anon Haruest grewe on, and rest from the Grasshopper his woonted moysture. Then weakely skips he to the medows brinkes: where till fell winter he abode. But stormses continually powring, hee went for succour to the Ant his olde acquaintance, to whome he had scarce discouered his estate, but the little worme made this replie.

Pack hence (quoth he) thou idle lazie worme,
My house doth harbour no unthristie mates:
Thou scornedst to toile, and now thou feeldst the storne,
And staruest for foode while I am fed with cates.
Use no intreats, I will relentlesse rest,
For toyling labour hates an idle guest.

The Grasshopper, foodlesse, helpelesse, and strengtheslesse, got into the next brooke, and in the yeelding fand digde himselfe a pit: by which likewise he ingraued this Epitaph.

When Springs greene prime arrayd me with delight,
And every power with youthfull vigor fild,
Gaue strength to worke what euer fancie wild:
I neuer feard the force of winters spight.

When first I saw the sunne the day begin,
And drie the mornings teares from hearbs and graffe;
I little thought his chearefull light would passe,
Till ugly night with darknes enterd in.
And then day loft I mournd, spring past I waild,
But neither teares for this or that auaild.

Then too too late I prais'd the Emmets paine, |
That fought in spring a harbour gainst the heate:
And in the harueft gathered winters meate,
Perceiving famine, frosts, and stormie raine.

My wretched end may warne Greene springing youth,
To use delights as toyes that will deceive,
And scorne the world before the world them leave:
For all worlds trust, is ruine without ruth.

Then blest are they that like the toylng Ant,
Prouide in time gainst winters wofull want.

With this the grasshopper yeelding to the weathers extremitie, died comfortlesse without remedie. Like him my selfe: like me, shall all that trust to friends or times inconstancie. Now faint of my last infirmitie, beseeching them that
shal burie my bodie, to publish this last farewell, written with my wretched hand.

Falicem fuiffe infaustum.

A letter written to his wife, found with this booke after his death.

The remembrance of many wrongs offered thee, and thy unreprooued virtues, adde greater sorrow to my miserable state, then I can utter, or thou conceiue. Neither is it leffened by consideration of thy absence (though shame would let me hardly beholde thy face) but exceedingly aggrauated, for that I cannot (as I ought) to thy owne felfe reconcile my felfe, that thou mightest witnffe my inward woe at this instant, that haue made thee a wofull wife for so long a time. But equal heauen hath denied that comfort, giuing at my last neede / like succour as I haue sought all my life: being in this extremitie as voide of helpe, as thou haft beene of hope. Reason would, that after so long waste, I should not fend thee a childe to bring thee greater charge; but consider, he is the fruit of thy wombe, in whose face regard not the fathers faults so much, as thy owne perfections. He is yet Greene, and may grow straight, if he be carefully tended: otherwise apt enough (I feare me) to follow his fathers folly. That I haue offended
thee highly I knowe, that thou canst forget my injuries I hardly beleue : yet perfwade I my felfe if thou saw my wretched state, thou couldeft not but lament it: nay, certainly I knowe thou wouldeft. Al my wrongs muste themselfes about me, euery euill at once plauges me. For my contempt of God, I am contemned of men: for my swareing and forswearing, no man will beleue me: for my gluttony, I suffer hunger: for my drunkennesse, thirst: for my adulterie, vlcerous fores. Thus God hath cast me downe, that I might be humbled: and punished me for example of others finne: and although he sufferers me in this world to perishe without succour, yet truft I in the world to come to finde mercie, by the merits of my Sauior, to whome I commend this, and commit my soule.

*Thy repentant husband for his disloyaltie.* Robert Greene.

*Faelicem fuiffe infaustum.*

**Finis.**
XXXII.

THE REPENTANCE OF ROBERT GREENE.

1592.
NOTE.

There was only one edition of 'The Repentance,'—viz., of 1592. I am indebted for it to the Bodleian. Of this unquestionably genuine and authentic book, see annotated *Life* in Vol. I.—G.
The Repentance
of Robert Greene Maister
of Artes.

Wherein by himselfe is laid open his loose life,
with the manner of his death.

AT LONDON
Printed for Cutbert Burbie, and are to be sold at
the middle shop in the Poultry, vnder
Saint Mildreds Church.
1592.
The Printer to the Gentlemen Readers.

Gentlemen, I know you are not unacquainted with the death of Robert Greene, whose pen in his lifetime pleased you as well on the Stage, as in the Stationers shops: And to speake truth, although his loose life was odious to God and offensife to men, yet forasmuch as at his last end he found it most grievous to himselfe (as appeareth by this his repentant discourse) I doubt not but he shall for the same deserue favour both of God and men. And considering Gentlemen, that Venus hath her charmes to inchaunt; that Fancie is a Sorceresse bewitching the Senses, and follie the onely enemie to all vertuous actions. And forasmuch as the purest glasse is the most brickle, the finest Lawne the soonest staind, the highest Oake most subiekt to the wind, and the quickest wit the more easily woone to folly: I doubt not but you will with regarde forget his follies, and like to the Bee gather hony
out of the good counsels of him, who was wise, learned, and politike, had not his lascious life withdrawn him from those studies which had been far more profitable to him.

For herein appeareth that he was a man giuen ouer to the lust of his owne heart, forsaking all godlines, & one that daily delighted in all manner of wickednes. Since other therefore haue forerun him in the like faults, and haue been forgiuen both of God and men, I trust hee shall bee the better accepted, that by the working of Gods holy spirit, returnes with such a resolued Repentance, being a thing acceptable both to God and men.

To conclude, forasmuch as I found this discourse very passionate, and of woonderfull effect to withdraw the wicked from their ungodly waies, I thought good to publish the same: and the rather, for that by his repentance they may as in a glasse see their owne follie, and thereby in time resolue, that it is better to die repentant, than to liue dishonest.

Yours C. B.
To all the wanton youths of England: Robert Greene wisheth reformation of wilfulness.

When I consider (kinde, Cuntrimen) that youth is like to the spring time of man's age, readie in the bloome to be nipped with euery misfortune, and that a yong man is like to a tender plant, apt to be wrested by nurture either to good or euill, as his friendes like good Gardeners shall with care indewour his education: seeing in the prime of our yeares vice is most ready to creepe in, and that want of experience committeth fundrie wanton desires, I thoght good to lay before you a president of such prejudicial inconueniences, which at the first seeming sweete unto youth, at the last growe into fruits of bitter repentance: For a yong man led on by selfe will (hauling the raines of libertie in his owne hand) foreseeth not the ruth of follie, but aimeth at present pleasures, for he giues himselfe up to delight, and thinketh euerie thing good, honest, lawfull and vertuous, that fitteth for the content of his lasciuious
humour: hee foreseeth not that such as clime haftely, fall sodainely: that Bees haue flings as well as honie: that vices haue ill endes as well as sweete beginnings: and whereof growes this heedles life, but of selfe-conceit, thinking the good counsell of age is dotage: that the aduice of friends proceeds of enuie, and not of loue: that when their fathers correct them for their faults, they hate them: whereas when the blacke Oxe hath trod on their feete, and the Crowes foote is seene in their eies, then toucht with the feeling of their owne follie, they figh out had I wift, when repentance commeth too late. Or like as waxe is ready to receive euery newe fourme, that is stamped into it, so is youth apt to admit of every vice that is obieSted unto it, and in young yeares wanton desires is cheefely predominate, especiallie the two Ringleaders of all other mischiefes, namely pride and whoredome: these are the Syrens that with their enchanting melodies, drawe them on to utter confuSion: for after a young man hath suckt in that finne of pride, hee groweth into contempt, and as he increaseth provde in his attyre, so he is scornfull in his lookes, and disdaines the wholesome admonition of his honest freends, whose aduice he supposeth to be doone of malice, and therefore esteemeth his owne waies best, and had rather hazard his life, than to loose an inch of his credit. Pride is like to fier, that will die and goe out if it bee not maintained with fewell, and yet
lay on neuer fo bigge logges, it consumes them all to ashes, fo pride craues maintenance, or els it will fade: and had a young man neuer fo great revenues, pride at laft will reduce it to begger you: for it is such a sinne, as once got into the boane it will feep into the flesh: he that once ietteth in his brauerie, if he haue no means to maintaine it, will leaue no bad course of life unattempted, but hee will haue corners to upholde his follie. Heereof growes cooffenages, thefts, murthers, and a thousand other pettie mischiefes, and causes many proper persons to bee truft vp at the gallowes, purchasing thereby infamy to themselues, and hart breaking sorrow to their friends and parents for euer.

Companion to this vice, is lust and lecherie, which is the viper, whose venome is incurable, and the onely sinne that in this life leadeth to shame, and after death unto hell fire: for he that giueth himselfe ouer to harlots, selleth his soule to destrucion, and maketh his bodie subiect to all incurable diseaeses. These two vices do not onlie waste a mans substance, but also consumeth his bodie and soule, and maketh him attempt to do any mischief for his maintenance therein. If happely the young man hath any grace, and is loth to take any unlawfull wayes, the ordinary course of his copesmates is straight to call him coward, and cast him out of their fauour, or els by suweete per- suasions and flattering vvordes, make him forsake God
and all good means of life whatsoever: this is the manner, life, and course of such as will not listen to the grave advice of their parents, but seeketh thereby to bring their grave hair with grief unto their graves.

This ensuing discourse, gentle Reader, doth lay open the graceless endeavours of my selfe, who although I were for a long time given over to the lust of my own hart, yet in the end, God's grace did so favourably work in me, that I trust heerein thou shalt perceive my true and unsalied repentance. Accept it in good part, and if it may profit anie I haue my desire.

Farewell, R. G.
The Repentance
of Robert Greene, Maifter
of Arts.

S there is no steele so stiffe, but the stamp will pierce; no flint so harde, but the drops of raine will hollowe: so there is no heart so voide of grace, or giuen ouer to wilfull follie, but the mercifull fauour of God can mollifie. An instance of the like chaunced to my selfe, being a man wholy addicted to all gracelesse induuors, giuen from my youth to wantonnes, brought vp in riot, who as I grew in yeares, so I waxed more ripe in vngodlines, that I was the mirrour of mischiefe, and the very patterne of all prejudiciall actions: for I neither had care to take any good course in life, nor yet to listen to the friendly persuasions of my parents. I seemed as one of no xii.
religion, but rather as a meere Atheist, contemning
the holy precepts vttred by any learned preacher: I
would smile at such as would frequent the
Church, or such place of godly exercise, &
would scoffe at any that would checke mee
with any wholesome or good admonition: so
that herein I seemed a meere reprobate, the child
of Sathan, one wipt out of the booke of life:
and as an outcast from the face and favor of God,
I was giuen ouer to drunkennes, so that I lightly
accounted of that company that would not inter-
taine my inordinate quaffing. And to this beastly
sinne of gluttonie, I added that detestable vice
of swearing, taking a felicitie in blaspheming &
prophaning the name of God, confirming nothing
idlely but with such solemne oths, that it amazed
euen my companions to heare mee. And that I
might seeme to heape one sinne vpon another,
I was so rooted therein, that whatsoeuer I got, I
stil consumed the same in drunkennes.

Liuing thus a long time, God (who suffereth
sinners to heape coles of fire vpon their owne
heads, and to bee fed fat with sinne against the
day of vengeance) suffered me to go forward in
my loose life: many warninges I had to draw me
from my detestable kind of life, and divers crosse
to contrary my actions: but all in vaine, for
though I were sundry times afflicted with many
foule and greeuoues diseases, and thereby scourged with the rod of Gods wrath, yet when by the great labor & friendfhip of sundry honefleft perfons, they had (though to their great charges) fought & procured my recovery, I did with the Dog Redire in vomitum, I went again with the Sow to wallow in the mire, and fell to my former follies as frankly, as if I had not tasted any iot of want, or neuer been scourged for them. Confuetudo peccandi tollit jensum peccati; my daily cuftome in finne had cleane taken away the feeling of my finne: for I was fo giuen to these vices afore faide, that I counted them rather veniall fcapes & faults of nature, than any great / and greeuoues offence: neither did I care for death, but held it onely as the end of life. For comming one day into Alderfgate ftreel to a welwillers houfe of mine, hee with other of his friendes perfwaded me to leaue my bad courfe of life, which at length would bring mee to vttter destruction, whereupon I scoffingly made them this anfwer. Tufh, what better is hee that dies in his bed than he that endes his life at Tyburne, all owe God a death: if I may haue my defire while I liue, I am fatisfied, let me shift after death as I may. My friends hearing these words, greatly greeued at my graceleffe resolution, made this reply: If you feare not death in this world, nor the paines
of the body in this life, yet doubt the second death, & the losse of your soule, which without hearty repentance must rest in hell fire for euere and euere.

Hell (quoth I) what talke you of hell to me? I know if I once come there, I shal haue the company of better men than my selfe, I shal also meete with some madde knaues in that place, & so long as I shal not sit there alone, my care is the lesse. But you are mad folks (quoth I) for if I feared the Judges of the bench no more than I dread the judgements of God, I would before I spfte diue into one Carles bagges or other, and make merrie with the shelles I found in them for long as they would laft. And though some in this company were Fryers of mine owne fraternitie to whom I spake the wordes: yet were they so amazed at my prophane speeches, that they wisht themselues foorth of my company. Whereby appeareth that my continuall delight was in sinne, and that I made my selfe drunke with the dregges of mischiefe. But beeing departed thence vnto my lodging, / and now grown to the full, I was checked by the mightie hand of God: for Sicknes (the messenger of death) attached me, and tolde me my time was but short, and that I had not long to liue: wherevpon I was vexed in mind, and grew very heavy. As thus I fate solemnly
thinking of my end, and feeling my selfe waxe ficker and ficker, I fell into a great passion, and was wonderfully perplexed, yet no way discouered my agony, but fate still calling to mind the lewdnes of my former life: at what time sodainly taking the booke of Resolution in my hand, I light vpon a chapter therein, which discouered vnto mee the miserable state of the reprobate, what Hell was, what the worme of Conscience was, what tormentes there was appointed for the damned soules, what vnsppeakable miseries, what vnquenchable flames, what intolerable agonies, what incomprehensiblę griefs; that there was nothing but feare, horror, vexation of mind, depruition from the sight and fauour of God, weeping and gnashing of teeth, and that al those tortures were not terminated or dated within any compasse of yeares, but euer-lasting, world without end; concluding all in this of the Psalms: Ab inferis nulla est redemptio.

After that I had with deepe consideration pondered vpon these points, such a terrour stroke into my conscience, that for very anguish of minde my teeth did beate in my head, my lookes waxed pale and wan, and fetching a great sigh, I cried vnto God, and said: If all this be true, oh what shall become of me? If the rewarde of sinne be death and hell, how many deaths and hels do I deserue, that haue beeene a moft miserable sinner?
If damnation be the meed for wickednes, then am I damned: for in all the world there never liued a man of worser life. Oh what shall I doe? I cannot call to God for mercie; for my faults are beyond the compasse of his fauour: the punishment of the body hath an ende by death, but the paines of the soule by death are made euerlafting. Then what a miserable case am I in if I die! yet if my death might redeeme my offences, & wash away my finnes, oh might I suffer every day twentie deathes while seauen yeares lafteth, it were nothing; but when I shall end a contempt to the world, I shal enjoy the disdaine of men, the displeasure of God, & my soule (that immortall creature) shal euerlaftingly bee damned: Oh woe is mee, why doe I liue? nay rather why was I borne? Cursed be the day wherein I was born, and haplesse be the brefts that gaue me sucke. Why did God create me to bee a vessell of wrath? Why did hee breath life into me, thus to make me a loft sheepe? Oh I feele a hell already in my conscience: the number of my finnes do muster before my eies, the poore mens plaints that I haue wronged, cries out in mine eares and faith, Robin Greene thou art damned: nay, the iustice of God tels mee I cannot bee faued. Now I do remember (though too late) that I haue read in the Scriptures, how
neither adulterers, swearers, theues, nor murderers shall inherit the kingdom of heauen. What hope then can I haue of any grace, when (giuen ouer from all grace) I exceeded all other in these kinde of finnes? If thus vpon earth and aliue I feele a hell, oh what a thing is that hell, where my soule shall euerlaftingly liue in torments! I am taught by the scripture to pray; but to whome shoule I pray? to him that I haue blasphemed, to him that I haue contemned and despisefed, whose name I haue taken in vaine? No, no, I am in a hell. Oh that my laft gaspe were come, that I might be with Iudas or Cain, for their place is better than mine; or that I might haue power with these hands to vnlofe my soule from this wretched carcasse, that hath imprisoned fo many wicked villainies within it. Oh I haue sinned, not against the Father, nor against the Sonne, but against the Holy Ghost: for I presumed vpon grace, and when the spirit of God cried in my mind & thought, and said, drunkennes is a vice, whoredome is a vice: I carelesly (in contempt) refisfed this motion, and as it were in a brauery, committed these finnes with greediness. Oh now I shall crie with Diues to haue one drop of water for my tongue, but shall not be heard: I haue sinned against my owne soule, and therefore shalbe caft into vtter darkness: and
further I shall not come till I haue paid the vert-
moot farthing, which I shal neuer be able to satisifie. 
Oh happy are you that feele the sparks of Gods 
faauour in your hearts, happy are you that haue 
hope in the passion of Chrift, happy are you that 
beleue that God died for you, happy are you 
that can pray. Oh why doth not God shew the 
like mercie vnto mee? The reason is, because 
in all my life I neuer did any good. I alwaies 
gloried in finne, and despiised them that imbraced 
vertue. God is iuift, and cannot pardon my 
offences; and therefore I would I were out of 
this earthly hell, so I were in that second hell, 
that my soule might suffer tormentes: for now 
I am vexed both in soule and bodie. 

In this despairing humor, searching further into 
the saide Booke of Resolution, I found a place 
that greatly did comfort mee, & laid before me 
the promises of Gods/mercie, shewing mee that 
although the iustice of God was great to punish 
sinners, yet his mercie did exceede his works: 
and though my faults were as red as fkarlet, 
yet washt with his bloud, they shoulde bee made 
as white as snow: therein was laid before mine 
eyes, that Davuid (who was called a man after his 
owne heart) did both commit adultery, and fealde 
it with murther: yet when hee did repent, God 
heard him, and admited him to his fauour.
Therein was laid before me the obstinate sinne of Peter, that not onely denied his Maister Christ, but also forswore him selfe: yet so soone as hee shed tears, and did hartily repent him, his offences were pardoned. Therein was laid open the theefe that had liued licentioufly, and had scarce in all his life done one good deed, and yet hee was faued by hope in the mercies of God. Therein was also laide open how the feueritie of the Law was mitigated with the sweet and comfortable promises of the Gospell, insomuch that I began to be somewhat pacified, & a little quieted in mind, taking great joy and comfort in the pithie perswasions and promises of Gods mercie alleadged in that Booke. And yet I was not presently resolued in my conscience, that God would deale so favorably with me, for that stil the multitude of my finnes presented me with his Iustice: and would therefore reason thus with my selfe. Why, those men (before mentioned) were elected and predestinated to be chosen vessels of Gods glory, & therfore though they did fal, yet they rose againe, & did shew it in time, with some other fruits of their election. But contrariwise, I (the moft wicked of all men) was euens brought vp from my swadling clouts in wickednes, my infancy was sin, & my riper age increaft in wickednes; I / tooke no pleasure but in ill,
neither was my minde sette vpon any thing but vpon the spoyle: then seeing all my life was lead in lewdnes, and I neuer but once felt any remorfe of conscience, how can God pardon mee, that repent rather for feare then for loue? Yet calling vnto mind the words of E/hay, that at what time foeuer a sinner doth repent him from the bottome of his heart, the Lord would wipe away all his wickednes out of his remembrance.

Thus being at a battaile betweene the spirite and the flesh, I beganne to feele a greater comfort in my mind, so that I did [with] teares confesse and acknowledge, that although I was a moft miserable sinner, yet the anguish that Christ suffered on the Crosse, was able to purge and cleanse me from all my offences: so that taking hold with faith vpon the promises of the Gospell, I waxed strong in spirite, and became able to reftist and withstand all the desperate attempts that Satan had giuen before to my weake and feeble conscience. When thus I had consideratly thought on the wretchednes of my life, and therewithall looked into the vncertainty of death, I thought good to write a short discourse of my [life], the fame which I haue ioyned to this treatise, containing as followeth. /
The life and death

of Robert Greene Maister
of Artes.

Neede not make long discourse of my parentes, who for their grauitie and honest life [were] well knowne and esteemed amongst their neighbors; namely, in the Cittie of Norwitch, where I was bred and borne. But as out of one selfe fame clod of clay there sprouts both stinking weeds and delightfull flowers: so from honest parentes often grow most dishonest children; for my Father had care to haue mee in my Non-age brought vp at schoole, that I might through the studie of good letters grow to be a frend to my self, a profitable member to the commoh-welth, and a comfort to him in his age. But as early pricks the tree that will prowe a thorne: so euuen in my first yeares I began to followe the filthines of mine owne desires, and
neyther to listen to the wholesome advvertisements of my parentes, nor bee rulde by the carefull correction of my Maister. For being at the Vniuerfitie of Cambridge, I light amongst wags as lewd as my selfe, with whome I consumed the flower of my youth, who drew mee to trauell into Italy, and Spaine, in which places I sawe and practized such villainie as is abhominable to declare. Thus by their counfaile I sought to furnish my selfe with coine, which I procured by cunning fleights from my Father and my friends, and my Mother pampered me so long, and secretly helped mee to the oyle of Angels, that I grew thereby prone to all mischiefe: so that beeing then conuerfant with notable Braggarts, boon companions and ordinary spend-thrifts, that praetized sundry superficial studies, I became as a Sien grafted into the same stocke, whereby I did absolutely participate of their nature and qualities. At my return into England, I ruffeled out in my silks, in the habit of Malcontent, and seemed so discontent, that no place would please me to abide in, nor no vocation cause mee to stay my selfe in: but after I had by degrees proceeded Maister of Arts, I left the Vniuerfitie and away to London, where (after I had continued some short time, & druien my self out of credit with sundry of my frends) I became an Author of
OF ROBERT GREENE.

Playes, and a penner of Loue Pamphlets, so that I soone grew famous in that qualitie, that who for that trade growne so ordinary about London as Robin Greene. Yong yet in yeares, though olde in wickednes, I began to resolue that there was nothing bad that was profitable: whereupon I grew so rooted in all mischiefe, that I had as great a delight in wickednesse, as fundrie hath in godlinesse: and as much felicitie I tooke in villainy, as others had in honestie.

Thus was the libertie I got in my youth, the cause of my licentious liuing in my age, and beeing the first steppe to hell, I find it now the first let from heauen.

But I would with all my natuie Countrymen, that reade this my repentaunce; First to feare God in their whole life, which I neuer did: Secondly, to obey their Parents, and to listen vnsto the wholesome counfaile of their Elders: so shall their dayes be multiplied vpon them heere on earth, and inherite the crowne of glorie in the kingdom of heauen. I exhort them alfo to leaue the company of lewd and ill liuers: for conquering with such Copes-mates, drawes them into sundry dangerous inconueniences: nor lette them haunt the company of harlots, whose throates are as smooth as oyle, but their feet lead the steps vnto death and destruction: for they like Syrens
with their sweete inchaunting notes, soothe me vp in all kind of vngodlines.

Oh take heede of harlots (I wish you the vnbridled youth of England) for they are the Basilifkes that kill with their eyes, they are the Syrens that allure with their sweete lookes: and they leade their fauorers vnto their destruction, as a sheep is lead vnto the slaughter.

From whordome I grew to drunkennes, from drunkennes to swearing and blaspheming the name of God, hereof grew quarrels, frayes, and continual controuerfies, which are now as worms in my conscience gnawing me incessantly. And did I not through hearty repentance take hold of Gods mercies, euen these detestable finnes woulde drench me downe into the damnable pit of destruction; for Stipendum peccati mors.

Oh knowe (good Countrymen) that the horrible fins and intolerable blasphemie I haue vfed against the Maiestie of God, is a blocke in my conscience, and that so heauy that there were no way with me but desperation, if the hope of Christs death and passion did not helpe to ease mee of so intolerable and heauie a burthen.

I haue long with the deafe Adder stoppt mine eares against the voice of Gods Ministers, yea my heart was hardened with Pharao against all the motions that the spirit of God did at any time
worke in my mind, to turn me from my detestable kind of living.

Yet let me confess a truth, that even once, and yet but once, I felt a fear and horror in my conscience, & then the terror of God's judgments did manifestly teach me that my life was bad, that by sin I deserved damnation, and that such was the greatness of my sin, that I deserved no redemption. And this inward motion I received in Saint Andrews Church in the City of Norwich, at a Lecture or Sermon then preached by a godly learned man, whose doctrine, and the manner of whose teaching, I liked wonderfull well: yea (in my conscience) such was his singlenes of hart, and zeale in his doctrine, that he might have converted [me] the most monster [sinner] of the world.

Well, at that time, whosoeuer was worst, I knewe my selfe as bad as he: for being new come from Italy, (where I learned all the villanies under the heauens) I was drowned in pride, whoredome was my daily exercise, and gluttony with drunkennes was my onely delight.

At this Sermon the terror of God's judgments did manifestly teach me, that my exercises were damnable, and that I should bee wipt out of the booke of life, if I did not speedily repent my loosenes of life, and re/forme my misdemeanors.
At this Sermon the said learned man (who doubtles was the child of God) did beate downe sinne in such pithie and perfwasiue manner, that I began to call vnto mind the daunger of my foule, and the prejudice that at length would befall mee for those grosse sinnes which with greedines I daily committed: in so much as sighing I saide in my selfe, Lord haue mercie vpon mee, and send me grace to amend and become a new man.

But this good motion lafted not long in mee; for no sooner had I met with my copesmates, but seeing me in such a solemne humour, they demaunded the caufe of my sadnes: to whom when I had discouered that I sorrowed for my wickedneffe of life, and that the Preachers wordes had taken a deepe impression on my conscience, they fell vpon me in ieating manner, calling me Puritane and Presizian, and wished I might haue a Pulpit, with such other scoffing tearmes, that by their foolish perfwasion the good and wholesome leffon I had learned went quite out of my remembrance: so that I fel againe with the Dog to my olde vomit, and put my wicked life in practife, and that so throughly as euer I did before.

Thus although God sent his holy spirit to call mee, and though I heard him, yet I regarded
OF ROBERT GREENE.

...it no longer than the present time, when sodainly forsaking it, I went forward obstinately in my misfe. Neuerthelesse soone after I married a Gentlemans daughter of good account, with whom I liued for a while: but for as much as she would perfwade me from my wilful wickednes, after I had a child by her, I caft her off, hauing spent vp the marriage money which I obtained by her. /

Then left I her at fix or seuen, who went into Lincolneshire, and I to London: where in short space I fell into fauor with fuch as were of honorable and good calling. But heere note, that though I knew how to get a friend, yet I had not the gift or reafon how to keepe a friend: for hee that was my deareft friend, I would bee sure fo to behaue my felfe towards him, that he shoulde euer after profeffe to bee my vtter enemie, or elfe vowe neuer after to come in my company.

Thus my misdemeanors (too many to bee recited) caused the moft part of those so much to despife me, that in the end I became friendles, except it were in a fewe Alehouses, who commonly for my inordinate expences would make much of me, vntil I were on the score, far more than euer I meant to pay by twenty nobles thick.

After I had wholy betaken me to the penning of plaies (which was my continuall exercise) I
was so far from calling vpon God, that I fildome thought on God, but tooke such delight in swearing and blaspheming the name of God, that none could think otherwise of mee, than that I was the child of perdition.

These vanities and other trifling Pamphlets I penned of Loue, and vaine fantasies, was my chiefeft stay of liuing, and for those my vaine discourses, I was beloued of the more vainer sort of people, who beeing my continuall companions, came still to my lodging, and there would continue quaffing, carowling, and surfeting with me all the day long.

But I thanke God that hee put it in my head, to lay open the most horrible coosenages of the common Conny-catchers, Coofeners, and Crossebiters, which I haue indifferently handled in those my seuerall discourses already imprinted. And my truft is that those discours/les will doe great good, and bee very beneficiall to the Commonwealth of England.

But oh my deare Wife, whose company and fight I haue refrained these fixe yeares: I aske God and thee forgiueness for so greatly wronging thee, of whome I seldom or neuer thought vntill now. Pardon mee (I pray thee) wherefouer thou art, and God forgiue mee all my offences.

And now to you all that liue and reuell in such
wickednesse as I haue done, to you I write, and in Gods name wish you to looke to yourselves, and to reforme your selves for the safe gard of your owne soules: dissemble not with God, but seeke grace at his handes; hee hath promisit it, and he will performe it.

God doth fundry times deferre his pu[n]ishment vnto those that runne a wicked race; but Quod defertur non auctur, that which is deferde is not quittanst, a day of reckoning will come, when the Lord will say; Come giue account of thy Stewardship. What God determineth, man cannot preuent: he that binds two finnes together, cannot go unpunisht in the one: so long the Pot goeth to the Pit, that at last it comes broken home.

Therefore (all my good friends) hope not in money, nor in friends, in favours, in kindred: they are all vncertaine, and they are furtheft off, when men thinke them most nigh. Oh were I now to begin the flower of my youth, were I now in the prime of my yeares, how far would I bee from my former follyes: what a reformed course of life would I take: but it is too late; onely now the comfortable mercies of the Lord is left me to hope in./

It is bootlesse for me to make any long discouerfe to such as are graceslesse as I haue beene. All wholesome warninges are odious vnto them, for
they with the spider sucke poison out of the most prectious flowers, & to such as God hath in his secrete counsell elected, fewe words will suffice. But howsoever my life hath beene, let my repentant ende be a generall example to all the youth in England to obey their parentes, to flie whoredome, drunkennes, swearing, blaspheming, contempt of the word, and such greuous and grosse finnes, leaft they bring their parents heads with sorrow to their graues, and leaft (with mee) they be a blemish to their kindred, and to their posteritie for euer.

Thus may you see how God hath secrete to himselfe the times of calling: and when hee will haue them into his vineyard, some hee calleth in the morning, some at noone, and some in the euening, and yet hath the laft his wages aswell as the first: For as his iudgementes are inscrutable, so are his mercies incomprehensible. And therefore let all men learne these two leffons; not to despaire, because God may worke in them through his spirit at the laft houre; nor to presume, leaft God giue them ouer for their presumption, and deny them repentance, and so they die impenitent: which _finalis impenitentia_ is a manifest sinne against the holy Ghost.

To this doth that golden sentence of S. Augustine allude, which hee speaketh of the theefe, hanging
on the Croffe. There was (faith hee) one theefe saued and no more, therefore presume not; and there was one saued, and therefore despair not. And to conclude, take these caueats here after following. /
Certaine Cauiats sent by Robert Greene to a freund of his (as a farewell:) written with his owne hand.

1 The feare of the Lord is the beginning of wisdome: therefore serue God, leaft he suffer thee to be lead into temptation.

2 Despise neither his worde nor his Minister: for he that heareth not can haue no faith, & without faith no man can be saued.

3 Obey thy Prince: for he that lifteth his hande against the Lords anointed, shall be like vnto a withered plant.

4 Despise not the counsaile of thy Father, nor the wholesome admonition of thy mother: for he that lifteth not to their lessons, shall be cut off in his youth.

5 Spend the prime of thy yeares in vertue: so doft thou lay an earnest pennie of honorable age.

6 Flie the sweetnes of the grape: for a man that is giuen to much wine shall neuer be rich.
7 Take not the name of God in vain: for then thou shalt not be guiltlesse, nor shall the curse of God come neare thy house.

8 A man that delights in harlots shall heape sinne vpon his soule: he shall be an open shame in the streets, and his place shall not be knowne.

9 He that robbeth from his neighbour, purchaseth discredite to himselfe and his kindred, and he shall not go to his graue with honor.

10 Who medleth with pitch shall be defiled, and he that eateth the bread of Robbers, fatneth himselfe against the day of vengeance.

11 Giue not thy youth ouer to the Deuill, neyther vow the dregs of thy olde age vnto God; for a repentant mind commeth from God.

12 Remember thy end, and thou shalt neuer doe amisse, and let the law of the Lord be a lanthorne to thy feete: so shall thy pathes bee aright, and thou die with honour.

Robert Greene.
The manner of the death and last end of
Robert Greene Maister of Artes.

After that he had pend the former discourse (then lying sore sick of a
furset which hee had taken with drinking) hee continued most patient and peni-
tent; yea he did with teares forfake the world, renounced swearing, and desired forgiuenes of
God and the worlde for all his offences: so that
during all the time of his sicknesse (which was
about a moneths space) hee was never heard to
sweare, raue, or blaspheme the name of God as
he was accustomed to do before that time, which
greatly comforted his wel willers, to see how
mightily the grace of God did worke in him.

He confessed himselfe that he was never heart
sicke, but said that all his paine was in his belly.
And although continually scowred, yet still his
belly swelled, and never left swelling vpward, vntill
it sweld him at the hart and in his face.
During the whole time of his sickness, he continually called upon God, and recited these sentences following:

O Lord forgive me my manifold offences.
O Lord have mercie upon me,
O Lord forgive me my secret sins, and in thy mercie (Lord) pardon them all.
Thy mercie (O Lord) is aboue thy works.

And with such like godly sentences he passed the time, euen till he gave vp the Ghost.

And this is to bee noted, that his sickness did not so greatly weaken him, but that he walked to his chaire & backe againe the night before he departed, and then (being feeble) laying him downe on his bed, about nine of the clocke at night, a friende of his tolde him, that his Wife had sent him commendations, and that shee was in good health: whereat hee greatly rejoiced, confessed that he had mightily wronged her, and wished that hee might see her before he departed. Whereupon (feeling his time was but short) hee tooke pen and inke, & wrote her a Letter to this effect.

Sweet Wife, as euer there was any good will or friendship betwene thee and mee, see this bearer (my Host) satisfied of his debt: I owe him tenne pound, and but for him I had perished in the
Forget and forgive my wronges done unto thee, and Almighty God haue mercie on my soule. 
Farewell till we meet in heauen, for on earth thou shalt never see me more.
This 2 of September.
1592.
Written by thy dying Husband.
Robert Greene.
Greenes Prayer in the time of his sickness.

Lord Iesus Christ my Saviour and redeemer, I humbly beseech thee to looke downe from heauen vpon me (thy servant that am grieued with thy spirite, that I may patiently endure to the end thy rod of chastifement: And forasmuch as thou art Lorde of life and death, as also of strength, health, age, weakenes, and sicknes, I do therefore wholy submit my selfe vnto thee, to bee dealt withall according to thy holy will and pleasure. And seeing O mercifull Iefu, that my finnes are innumerable like vnto the fandes of the sea, and that I haue so often offended thee that I haue worthely deserued death and utter damnation, I humbly pray thee to deale with me according to thy gratious mercie and not agreeable to my wicked deserts. And graunt that I may (O Lorde) through thy spirite, with patience, suffer and beare this Crosse, which thou haft worthily laid vpon mee: notwithstanding how greeuous foeuer the burthen thereof be, that my faith may be found laudable and glorious in thy sight, to the increase
of thy glory, & my euerlafting felicitie. For euen thou (O Lord) moft sweete Sauior didst firft suffer paine before thou wert crucified : Since therefore O meeke Lambe of God that my way to e/ternall ioy is to suffer with thee worldly greeuances, graunt that I may be made like vn to thee, by suffering patiently, aduerfitie, trouble, and ficknes. And lastly, forasmuch as the multitude of thy mercies doth put away the finnes of those which truely repent, so as thou remembreft them no more, open the eye of thy mercie, and behold me a moft miserable and wretched sinner, who for the same doth most earnestly desire pardon and forgiuenes. Renew (O Lorde) in mee, whatsoeuer hath beene decayed by the fraudulent mallice of Sathan, or my owne carnall wilfulnes: receive me (O Lord) into thy fauour, consider of my contrition, and gather vp my teares into thy heauenly habitation: and seeing (O Lorde) my whole trust and confidence is onely in thy mercie, blot out my offences, and tread them vnder feet, so as they may not be a witnesse against me at the day of wrath. Grant this O Lord, I humbly beseech thee, for thy mercies sake.

Amen.

FINIS.
XXXIII.

GREENES VISION,

ETC.
NOTE.

The following is Mr. Dyce's note to even his second edition of Greene's "Dramatic and Poetical Works" (1861):—"My acquaintance with Greene's *Vision* is confined to the description of it and the extracts from it in Mr. Collier's Introduction to our author's *Pandosto,—Shakespeare's Library*, and in his *Farther Particulars regarding Shakespeare and his Works*, page 35. Though, as Mr. Collier remarks, 'Greene could have had nothing to do with the title-page,' this tract would seem to be a genuine production, and was most probably printed towards the close of the year 1592. It was, no doubt, one of those 'many papers in sundry booksellers hands' mentioned by Chettle in the Address 'to the Gentlemen Readers' in *Kind-Harts Dreame*.' For more on 'Greene's Vision' see annotated Life in Vol. I.

This completes the Prose Works of Greene; for another work semi-modelled after the 'Vision,' is assuredly the production of another. The title-page thus runs:—

**GREENES**

**Newes both from**

*Heauen and Hell.*

Prohibited the firdt for writing of Bookes, and banifhed out of the laft for difplaying of Conny-catchers.

*Commended to the Prefse*

By B. R.

*MARCIANTIA REALE*

*AT LONDON,*

Printed Anno. Domini.

1593.

Mr. Dyce never saw this either. I have been more fortunate in discovering an exemplar in the British Museum. It will be found utilized in all its personal and biographic items, etc., in the annotated Life, Vol. I. There also other kindred tractates are quoted from.—G.
GREENES VISION:

Written at the instant of his death.

Conteyning a penitent passion for the folly of his Pen.

Sero sed serio.

Imprinted at London for Thomas Newman, and are to be sould at his shop in Fleetstreete, in Saint Dunstons Churchyard.
To the right worshipfull and his e-
speciall good friend, M. Nicholas
Sanders of Ewell Esquier, T. Newman
wisheth all felicitie.

WHERE I as able as I am willing (Right
Worshipfull) to shewe my selfe thank-
full for your manie kindnesse extended
unto me, some more accomplisht Dedication then
this, should haue offred it selfe to your judiciaill
view at this instant. It was one of the last workes
of a wel known Author, therefore I hope it will
be more acceptable. Manie haue published repent-
aunces vnder his name, but none more vnfeigned
than this, being euerie word of his owne: his
own phrase, his own method. The experiences
of many vices brought forth this last vision of
virtue. I recommend it intirely to your worship
esuen ballancing censure. None haue more insight
then you into matters of wit. All men of Art
acknowledge you to bee / an especiall Mecenas,
and supporter of learning in these her despis'd latter days. I am one that haue no interest in knowledge, but the infeperate loue that I beare to them that profeffe it: That attendant loue on good letters, struies to honor you in whome Art is honoured. I thinke not this pamphlet any way proportionable in woorth with your worshippes patronage: but it is my desire to yeelde some encrease to your fame in anie thing that I shall imprint. Thus wishing to your worshippe that felicitie and contentment, which your owne best gouerned thoughtes doe aime at,
I most humblie take my leaue.

Your VVorships most bounden

T. Newman.
To the Gentlemen Readers,

Health.

Gentlemen, in a vision before my death, I foresee that I am like to sustain the shame of many follies of my youth, when I am shrowded in my winding sheet. O let not injurious tongues triumph over a dead carcass. Now I am sick, and sorrow hath wholly seiz'd on me: vain I have been, let not other men shew themselvse vain in reproaching my vanitie. I crave pardon of you all, if I have offended any of you with lascivious Pamphleting. Many things I have wrote to get money, which I could otherwise wish to be suppress'd: Poverty is the father of innumerable infirmities: in seeking to value private wantes, I have made myself a publicke laughing stock. He that commeth in Print, setteth himself vp as a common marke for every one to shooote at: I have shotte at many abuses, ouer shotte my selfe in describing of some:
where truth failed, my invention hath stood my friend. God forgive me all my misdemeanours: now in the best lust of my years, death I fear will deprive me of any further proceeding in securitie. This booke hath many things, which I would not have written / on my Tombe: I write this last, let it be my last will and testament.

Farewell, if I live you shall hear of me in deuinitie, in the meane time, accept the will for the deed, and speake well of me when I am dead.

Yours dying:
Robert Greene.
Fter I was burdened with the penning of the Cobler of Canterbury, I waxed passing melancholy, as grieuing that either I shold be wrong with enuy, or wronged with suspicion. But whē I entred into the consideratio, that flander spareth not Kings, I brookt it with the more patience, & thought, that as the strongest gustes offend leffe the low shrubs than the tall Cedars: So the blemish of report would make a les scharre in a cottage than in a pallace: yet I could not but conceit it hardly, and so in a discontented humor I sat me down vpon my bed-side, and began to cal to remembrance what fond and wanton lines had past my pen, how I had bent my course to a wrong shore, as beating my brains about such vanities as were little profitable, fowing my seed
in the sand and so reaping nothing but thornes and thistles. As thus I recounted over the follies that youth led me vnto, I stept to my Standish that stood hard by, and writ this Ode.

Greenes Ode, of the vanitie of wanton writings.

Though Tytirus the Heards swaine,
Phillis loue-mate felt the paine,
That Cupid fiers in the eie,
Till they loue or till they die,
Strained ditties from his pipe.

With pleasant voyce and cunning strype:
Telling in his song how faire,
Phillis eie-browes and hir haire.
How hir face past all supposes:
For white Lillies: for red Roses.
Though he founded on the hils,
Such fond passions as loue wils,
That all the Swaines that foulded by,
Flockt to heare his harmonie,
And vowed by Pan that Tytirus
Did Poet-like his loues discusfe,
That men might learne mickle good,
By the verdiit of his mood;
Yet olde Menelcas ouer-ag’d,
That many winters there had wag’d.
Sitting by and hearing this:
Said, their wordes were all amisse.
For (quoth he) such wanton laies,
Are not worthie to haue praise.
Ligges and ditties of fond loues,
Youth to mickle follie mowes.
And tould this old said saw to thee,
Which Coridon did learne to me,
Tis shame and sin for pregnant wits,
To spend their skill in wanton fits.
Martiall was a bonnie boy,
He writ loues griefe and loues ioy.
He tould what wanton lookes passes,
Twixt the Swaines and the laffes.
And mickle wonder did he write,
Of Womens loues and their spight.
But for the follies of his pen,
He was hated of most men:
For they could say, t'was sin and shame
For Schollers to endite such game.
Quaint was Ouid in his rime,
Chiefest Poet of his time.
What he could in words rehearse,
Ended in a pleasing verse.
Apollo with his ay-greene baies,
Crownd his head to shew his praije:
And all the Muses did agree,
He should be theirs, and none but he.
This Poet chaunted all of loue,  
Of Cupids wings and Venus doe:  
Of faire Corinna and her hew,  
Of white and red, and vaines blew.  
How they loued and how they greed,  
And how in fancy they did speed.  
His Elegies were wanton all,  
Telling of loues pleasing thrall,  
And cause he would the Poet seeme,  
That beft of Venus lawes could deeme,  
Strange precepts he did impart,  
And writ three bookes of loues art.  
There he taught how to woe,  
What in loue men sbould doe,  
How they might foonest winne,  
Honest women unto sinne:  
Thus to tellen all the truth,  
He infetted Romes youth:  
And with his bookees and verses brought  
That men in Rome naught els faught,  
But how to tangle maid or wife,  
With honors breach throug wanton life:  
The foolish fort did for his skill,  
Praise the deepnesse of his quill:  
And like to him faid there was none,  
Since died old Anacreon.  
But Romes Augustus worlds wonder,  
Brookt not of this foolish blonder:
Nor likt he of this wanton verse,
That loues lawes did rehearse.
For well he saw and did espie,
Youth was sore impaird thereby:
And by experience he finds,
VWanton booke infect the minds,
Which made him straight for reward,
Though the censure seemed hard,
To bannish Ovid quite from Rome,
This was great Augustus doome:
For (quoth he) Poets quils,
Ought not for to teach men ills.
For learning is a thing of prize,
To shew precepts to make men wise.
And neere the Muses sacred place,
Dwells the virtuous minded graces.
Tis shame and sinne then for good wits,
To shew their skill in wanton fits.
This Augustus did reply,
And as he said, so thinke I.

After I had written this Ode, a deepe insight
of my follies did pearce into the center of
my thoughtes, that I felt a passionat remorfe,
discouering such perticuler vanities as I had
soothed vp withall my forepassed humors, I began
to consider that that Aftrea, that virtue, that
metaphisical influence which maketh one man
differ from an other in excellence béeing I meane come from the heauens, & was a thing infused into man from God, the abuse whereof I found to be as preiudicial as the right vfer therof was profitable, that it ought to be imployed to wit, [not] in painting out a goddeffe, but in setting out the praisës of God: not in discouerëng of beauty but in discouerëng of vertues: not in laying out the platformes of loue, nor in telling the deepe passions of fancy, but in perfwading men to honest & honorable actions which are the steps that lead to the true and perfect felicity: the serpënt is then therefore an odious creature, for that he sucketh poyson from the O[d]oriferous flower, from whence the painëfull Bee gathers her sweete Honnie. And that Lapidarë is holden a man woorthless in the worlde, that will wretë the secret operation of the Diamond, to a deadly Aconiton: And such schollers deserue much blame, as out of that pretious fountaine of learning will fetch a pernitious water of vanitie: the trees that grow in Indea haue rough barks,* but they yeeld pretious gummës: and the ftones in Sicillia haue a duskie couller, but being cut they are as orient as the sunne: so the outward phrafe is not to be meaured by pleasing the eare, but the inward matter by profiting the

* Altered in contemporary pen and ink to 'barks' from misprint 'banks.'
minde: the puffing glorie of the loftie ftile shadowing wanton conceipts is like to the skin of a serpent that contriues impoysioned flesh, or to a panther that hath a beautifull hide but a beastly paunch: for as the flowers of Egipft pleafe the eye, but infect the stomack, and the water of the riuers Orume cooleth the hand but killeth the heart, fo bookes that contriue fcurilitie, may for a while breed a pleasing conceit and a merrie passion: but for every dram of mirth, they leave behinde them in the readers minde, a Tunfull of infecting mischiefs, like to the Scorpion, that flatters with his head and ftings with his faile. These premiffes drive me into a maze, especially when I considered, that wee were borne to profit our countrie, not onely to pleafure our felues: then the discommodities that grew from my vaine pamphlets, began to murther in my fight: then I cald to minde, how many idle fancies I had made to passe the Press, how I had pestred Gentlemens eyes and mindes, with the infection of many fond passions, rather infecting them with the allurements of some enchanted Aconiton, then tempered their thought with any honeft Antidote, which consideration entered thus farre into my con- science.
Greenes trouble of minde.

Ather of mercie, whose gratious fauour is more pliant to pardon, then wee to become penitent, who art more willing to shadowe the contrite heart with remission, than wee to offer our selues with hartie repentance: I heere in the humblenesse of heart /prostrate my selfe before the throne of thy maiestie, vphoulden with mercy and loue, as one blushing at the blemish of my vile and detestable offences, wherewith I have purchased the burden of thy wrath, being so heauie a load, that the shoulders of my poore diseased conscience, being ready to sink everlasting under so heauie a weight, destitute of any meane to support the same, or to cure the passion of such a maladie, but by the value that growes from the death of thy bitter passion, who camst into the world, not to call the righteous, but sinners to repentance.

When I doe (great Phyſtion of our deepeft misdeeds) but glaunce mine eye at the object of my finne, and Sicco pede passe them over as faults of course and follies of youth: yet I am pierced with so sharpe a passion, that I cannot conceale the greef of my conscience, but it bursteth foorth in sighes and groanes, insomuch that I thinke life an enemie to my weale, and I wish the
beginning of my dayes had beene the hower of my departure.

But when with a strict insight, I say, Redde rationem villicationis, and take a straight accompt what the deedes of my youth haue beene, how full of vanitie, and fond conceited fancies, oh then what a fearefull terror dooth torture my minde, what a dungeon of dollours lyes open to swallow me? As the Scorpion flings deadly, and the Vipers bites mortally, so dooth the worme of my conscience grype without ceasing. And yet O Lord, a deeper miserie, for when with a forefeeing consideration I looke into the time to come, wherein the secret coniecature of my faults and offences, shal be manifested and laid to my charge, and that I know Stipendium peccati mors, Oh then whether shal I flie from thy presence? shal I take the wings of the morning and absent my selfe? can the hideous mountaines hide me, can wealth redeeme finne, can beautie counteruaile my faults, or the whole world counterpoyse the ballance of mine offences? oh no, and therefore am I at my wits end, wishing for death, and the end of my miserable dayes, and yet then the remembrance of hell, and the torments thereof drive me to wish the contrarie. But / when I couet long life, and to see more dayes, then this imagination wrings me, I thinke, as I was conceiued in finne and from
my birth inclined to ill: so the sequell of my dayes will growe a Malo in penis, and the longer the woorfe, the more yeares, the more offences: for the life of man is as the Panther, the longer he liues the more spots hee hath in his skinne, and the Onix, the longer it is kept, the more stroakes it hath. So our nature is so corrupt, that we renew not our bill with the Eagle, but grow blacker and blacker with the Halciones.

When I ruminate on these premissses, then I loath the length of more dayes, fearing leaft the aptnesse of my corrupt fleshe, through the rebellion thereof, against the spirit, heape greater plagues vpon my poore soule. What shall I doe then Lord, thus distrest on euery syde, hauing no hope of comfort left me, but feare and dispaire? If I seeke to man, I know the strength of Sampson, the pollicie of Achitophell, the wisedome of Salomon, to bee vaine in this respect, for all haue fynned and are within the compasse of my miserable condition: being payned with this maladie, to whome shall I flie for medicine? euon to the weete Phisytian of all fycklie soules, to thée that canst with a word cure all my sorrowes, to the kinde Samaritan, that wilt powre wyne and Oyle into my woundes, set mee on thine owne beast, and take care for the saluing of my hurts, that canst say, thy finnes are forgiuen, and I am whole.
To thée I come (ouer heated with the thirst of sinne) for water, that may spring in me a Well of lyfe: I am heauie loaden, and I will lay the burden on thy back, for thou art a promised mediator for the penitent vnto God the Father. It is thou that seekest the wandring sheepe, and bringest him home on thy shouders: thou wilt not loose that groate, but findeft it with ioy, thou weepest in the neck of thy repenting Sonne, and killest the fat Calfe for his welcome: thou hast cryed out in the streets, Were your sinnes as Red as Scarlet, Ile make them as white as Snowe, and were they as Purple, I will make them as white as wooll. / These proclaimed promises is comfort, this heauenly voice is consolation, whereby I am reuiued, and my conscience lightned of the follies of my youth: nowe haue I found the true and onely physition for my long diseased soule, euen he that came to heale the penitent. Give me grace Lord, then to take perfect handfaft of these comfortable sayings: stretch foorth thy hand, and I will with Peter spring into the water, for thou wilt vphould me: let me touch with faith the hem of thy Vesture, and then I shall enjoy the true working of that most singular medicine, thy death & bitter passion, who sufferedst for our finnes, and on the crosse criedst Consūmatum est, to take away the punishment due for our transgression: oh thy
mercy is infinite whereby thou calleſt vs, thy loue vnſearchable, whereby thou fauoureſt vs, and thy wisdome incomprehensible, whereby thou guideſt vs: all these doo appeare to be imparted towards me, in that thou stirreſt vp in my heart a loathing of my finne, and that the follies of my young yeares are odious in my remembrance. Sith then O Lord thou haſt touc̄t me with repentance, and haſt called me from the wildernesſe of wickednesſe and extreame diſpaire, to place me in the pleasanſt fields of sinceritie, truth and godlīnesſe: and so ſhadōwe me with the wings of thy grace, that my minde being free from all ſinfull cogitations, I may for eūer keepe my soule an ſindefiled member of thy church, and in faith, loue, feare, humblenesſe of heart, praier, and dutifull obedienc̄e, ſhew my selfe regenerate, and a reformed man from my former follies.

Being in this deepe meditation, lying contemplating vpon my bed, I fell a sleepe, where I had not lyne long in a flumber, but that me thought I was in a faire medow̄e, sitting vnder an Oake, viewing the beautie of the funne which then ſhewed himſelfe in his pride: as thus I fat gasing on fo gorgeous an obiect, I spied comming downe the Meade, two ancient men, aged, for their foreheads were the Calenders of their yeares,
and the whitenesse of their haires bewrayed the
number of their dayes, their pace was answerable
to their age, and *In diebus illis* hung vp\(\circ\) their
garments: their visages were wrinckled, but well
featured, and their countenance conteyned much
grauiteit. These two ould men came to me, and
fat downe by me, the one of the right hand, and
the other on the left: looking vpon them earnestly,
I espyed written on the ones brest *Chawcer*, and
on the others *Gower*: *Chawcer* was thus attired
as neere as I can describe it.

*The description of sir Geffery Chawcer.*

*His feature was not very tall;*
Leane he was; his legs were small,
Hofd within a flock of red;
A buttond bonnet on his head,
From under which did hang, I weene,
Siluer haires both bright and sheene:
His beard was white, trimmed round,
His countnance blithe and merry found:
A Sleewelesse Iacket large and wide,
*With many pleights and skirts fide,*
Of water Chamlet did he weare;
A whittell by his belt he beare.
His shooes were corned, broad before,
His Inckhorne at his fide he wore,
And in his hand he bore a booke:
Thus did this auntient Poet looke.

Thus was Chawcer attired, and not vnlike him
was John Gower, whose description take thus.

The description of John Gower.

L
Arge he was, his height was long;
Broad of brest, his lims were strong; /
But couller pale, and wan his looke,—
Such haue they that plyen their booke:
His head was gray and quaintly shorne,
Neately was his beard wore.
His visage graue, sterne and grim,—
Cato was most like to him.
His Bonnet was a Hat of blew,
His sleeues straight, of that fame hew;
A surcoate of a tawnie die,
Hung in pleights ouer his thigh:
A breech close vnto his dock,
Handsome with a long flock;
Pricked before were his shoone,
He wore such as others doone;
A bag of red by his side,
And by that his napkin tide.
Thus John Gower did appeare,
Quaint attired, as you heere.

Sitting as a man in a maze at the view of these
two ancient Poets, as well at the grauitie of their lookes, as the strangenesse of their attire. At last sir Geffry Chaucer start vp, and leaning on his staffe with a smiling countenance, began thus to breake silence. My friend quoth he, thy countenance bewrays thy thoughts, and thy outward lookes thy inward passions: for by thy face I see the figure of a discontented minde, and the very glaunce of thine eyes is a map of a disquieted conscience. Take heede, I tell thee sorrowes concealed are the more sower, and greeves smoothered, if they burst not out will make the heart to breake: I confesse it is best to bee secretarie to a man's selfe, and to reueale the inwarde thoughts to a stranger is mere follie, yet I tell thee, better brooke an inconuenience then a mischiefe, and be counted a little fond, then too froward. Therefore if thy greefe be not to priuate, or so neere to thy selfe, that thou wilt not bewray it to thy shirte: manie seestring fores launched are the sooner cured, and cares discovered are the sooner easel: thou haft heere two, whome experience hath taught many medicines / for young mens maladies, I am sir Geffrey Chaucer, this John Gower: what we can in counsaile, shall be thy comfort, and for secrecie we are no blabs. Heering sir Geffrey Chaucer thus familiar, I tooke heart at graffe to my selfe, and thought nowe I might haue my
doubt well debated, betwéene two such excellent schollers: wherevpon putting of my hat with great reuerence, I made this replie.

Graue Laureats, the tipes of Englands excellence for Poetry, and the worlds wonders for your wits, all haile, and happily welcome, for your presence is a salue for my passions, and the inward gréefes that you perceiue by my outward lookes, are alreadie halfe eased by your comfortable promise: I cannot denie but my thoughts are discontent, and my fences in a great maze, which I haue damd vp a long while, as thinking best to smoother sorrow with silence, but now I will set fire on the straw, and lay open my secrets to your selues, that your sweéet counfailes may easé my discontent. So it is, that by profeッション I am a scholler, & in wil do affect that which I could neuer effect in action, for faine would I haue some taste in the liberall sciences, but Non licet cui bis adire Corinthum, and therefore I content my selfe with a superficall insight, and only satisfie my desire with the name of a Scholler, yet as blind Baiard wil iumpe soonest into the mire, so haue I ventured afore many my betters, to put my selfe into the pressé, and haue set foorth sundrie bookes in print of loue & such amourous fancies which some haue fauoured, as other haue misliked. But now of late there came foorth a booke called the Cobler of Canterburie,
a merrie worke, and made by some madde fellow, containing plesant tales, a little tainted with fcurilitie, such reuerend Chawcer as your selpse set foorth in your iourney to Canterbury. At this booke the grauer and greater forte repine, as thinking it not fo plesant to seme, as preudiciall to many, croffing it with fuch bitter inueetiuies, that they condemne the Author almoft for an Atheift. Now learned Lawreat, heere lyes the touch of my passions: they father the booke vppon me, whereas it is Incerti authoris, and fufpitionlye flaunder me with many harde reproaches, / for penning that which neuer came within the compasse of my Quill. Their allegation is, because it is plesant, and therfore mine: because it is full of wanton conceits, and therfore mine: in some places say they the ftile bewraies him: thus vpon supposfed premissses they conclude peremptorie, & though some men of accoumpt may be drawne by reafon from that suppose, yet that Ignobile Vulgus; whose mouthes will not be flopt with a Bakers batch, will still crie, it was none but his: this father Chawcer hath made me enter into confideration of all my former follies, and to thinke how wantonly I haue spent my youth, in penning fuch fond pamphlets, that I am driuen into a dumpe whether they shal redound to my infuing credit, or my future infamie, or whether I haue doone well or ill,
in setting foorth such amourous trifles: heerein resolue me, and my discontent is doone.

At this long period of mine, Chawcer fat downe & laught, and then rising vp and leaning his back against a Trée, he made this merry aunswer. Why Greene quoth he, knowest thou not, that the waters that flow from Pernaffus Founte, are not tyed to any particular operation? that there are nine Muses, amongst whom as there is a Clio to write graue matters so there is a Thalia to endite pleafant conceits, and that Apollo hath Baies for them both, aswell to crowne the one for hir wanton amours, as to Honour the other for her worthy labours: the braine hath many ftrings, and the wit many fretches: some tragical to write, like Euripides: some comical to pen, like Terence: some depeely conceited to set out matters of great import: others sharpe witted to discouer pleafant fantasies: what if Cato set foorth fqueare censures, and Ouid amorous Axiomes, were they not both counted for their faculties excellent? yes, and Ouid was commended for his Salem ingenii, when the other was counted to haue a dull wit, & a flow memory: if learning were knit in one ftring, and could expresse himfelf but in one vaine, the should want of variety, bring all into an imperfect Chaos. But sundry men, sundry conceits, & wits are to be praised not for the grauity of the/matter,
but for the ripenes of the inuention: so that 

_Martiall, Horace_ or any other, deferue to bee

famoused for their Odes and Elegies, as well as 

_Hefiode, Hortensius_, or any other for their deeper

precepts of doctrines. Feare not then what those 

Morosie wil murmure, whose dead cinders brook

no glowing sparkes, nor care not for the opinion 
of such as hold none but Philosophie for a Sub-

iect: I tell thee learning will haue his due, and 

let a vipers wit reach his hand to _Apollo_, and 

hee shall sooner haue a branch to eternize his

fame, than the sowrest Satyricall Authour in the

worlde. Wee haue heard of thy worke to be 
amorous, sententious, and well written. If thou 
doubtest blame for thy wantones, let my selfe 
suffice for an instaunce, whose Canterburie tales 
are broad enough before, and written homely 
and pleasantly: yet who hath bin more canonised 
for his workes, than Sir _Geffrey Chaucer_? 

_What Green?_ Poets wits are freé, and their words 
ought to be without checke: so it was in my 
time, and therfore refolue thy selfe, thou haft doone 
Scholler-like, in setting foorth thy pamphlets, and 
shall haue perpetuall fame which is learnings due 
for thy endeuour. This saying of _Chawcer_

cheered mee vntill olde _John Gower_ rising vp with 
a sowre countenance began thus.
Greenes

John Gower to the Author.

Ell hath Chawcer said, that the braine hath fundrie strings, and the wit dierse stretches: some bent to pen grave Poems, other to endite wanton fancies, both honoured and prais'd for the height of their capacitie: yet as the Diamond is more estimated in the Lapidaries shop than the Topace, and the Rose more valued in the Garden than Gilly-flowers: So men that write of Morall precepts, or Philosophical Aphorismes are more highly esteemed, than such as write Poems of loue, and conceits of fancie. In elder time learning was so high prized that Schollers were companions for Kings, & Philosophers were fathers of the Commonwealth, vpholding the state with the strength of their precepts: their wits were then employed either to the censures of virtue, or to the secrets of nature: either to deliuer opinions of Morall Discipline, or conclusions of natural philosophy, being measured by the grauity of their sayings, not the wantonnes of their sentences: And so long were poets titled with many honors as long as their poems were vertuous, either tending to suppreffe vanitie with Hesiod, or to aduance arms and valour with Homer. But when they began to wrest their sonnets to a wrong vse,
then they were out of credite, and for an infaunce of their follies, Ouid there graunde Captaine, was rewarded with bannishment. They which confidred that man was born to profit his countrey, fought how to apply their time, and bend their wits to attaine to perfection of learning, not to inueagle youth with amours, but to incite to vertuous labours: some in their Academies, taught the motion of the Starres, the count of the heauens, some of the nature of trees, plants, hearbs and stones: others deciphered the secret qualities of beasts, birds, & fouls, others, writes of Aconomical precepts, some of policy, some of gouernement of Common wealthes, and how the Citizens should followe vertue, and eschewes vice: others deliuered instruction for manners. Thus all generallie aimed at an vnierfall profit of their countrey, and how to kéepe youth from any touch of idle vanities. None in their writings discoursed either of loue or hir lawes: for Venus then onely was holden for a wandring planet, not honored for a wanton Goddeffe. Philosophers were dunces in loues doctrine, and held it infamous for to be tainted with the blemis\(h\) of fond fancy: much more to pen down any precepts of affecti\(o\): if then Ethnik Philosophers, who knewe not God, but by a naturall instinct of vertue, fought so carefully to auoid such vanities, & only bent the sum of
their wits to their countries profit: the how blameworthy are such as endeavour to shew their quicke capacities in such wanton worke, as greatly prejudice the state of the commonwealth. I grant ther is no weed so il, but som wil gather, no stone so crafd, but some wil choose: nor no book so fond but some wil favor: but Vox populi vox Dei the most & the grauest wil account it vaine and scurrulous. Therefore trust me, /John Gowers opinion is: thou hast applied thy wits ill, & haft sowed chaffe & shalt reape no haruest. But my maister Chaucer brings in his workes for an instance, that as his, so thine shalbe famouse: no it is not a promife to conclude vpon: for men honor his more for the antiquity of the verse, the englifh & prose, than for any deepe loue to the matter: for proofe marke how they weare out of vse. Therefore let me tel thee, thy books are baits that allure youth, Syrens that sing sweetly, and yet destroy with their notes, faire flowers without smel and good phrafe without any profite.

Without any profite (quoth Chaucer) and with that hee start vp with a frown: no Gower, I tell the, his labours, as they be amorous, so they be sententious: and serve as well to suppreffe vanity, as they seem to import wantonnes. Is there no meanes to cure sores, but with Corasius? no helpe for vlcers, but sharpe
implafters? no value against vice, but four satyres? Yes, a pleasant vaine, quips as nie the quicke as a grauer inueteue, and vnder a merry fable can Esope as wel tant folly, as Hesode correct manners in his Heroicks. I tell theee this man hath joyned pleasure with profite, & though his Bee hath a sting, yet she makes sweet honny. Hath he not discouered in his workes the follies of loue, the sleights of fancy, and lightnesse of youth, to be induced to such vanities? and what more profit can there be to his countrey than manifest such open mischiefes, as grew from the conceit of beauty & deceit of women: and all this hath he painted down in his pamphlets. I grant (quoth Gower) the meaning is good, but the method is bad: for by aiming at an inconvenience he bringeth in a mischiefe: in seeking to suppress fond loue, the sweeties of his discourse allures youth to loue, like such as taking drink to cool their thirst, feele the tast so pleasant, that they drinke while they forfeit. Ouid drewe not so many with his remedie of Loue from loue, as his Ars Amandi bred amorous schollers, nor hath Greenes Bookes weaned so many from vanity, as they haue wedded from* wantonnesse. That is the reason (quoth Chawcer) that youth is more prone vnto euil than to good, and with the

* Corrected in old pen and ink to 'to.'
Serpent, fucke honny from the swee/test sirops: and haue not Poets shadowed weightie precepts in slender Poems and in pleasant fancies vsed deepe perswations? who bitte the Curtizans of his time and the follies of youth more than Horace, and yet his Odes were wanton. Who more inuaied against the manners of men then Martiall, and yet his verse was lasciuious? And had hee not better (quothe Gower) haue discouered his principles in some graue fort as Hesiod did or Pindaris, than in such amorous & wanton manner: the lightnesse of the conceit cracks halfe the credite, and the vanitie of the pen breeds the leffe beleefe. After Ouid had written his Art of Loue, and set the youth on fire to imbrace fancy, he could not reclaime them with

\[ \text{Otia \ $\frac{4}{1}$ tollas periere cupidinis arcus.} \]

The thoughts of young men are like Bauins, which once set on fire, will not out till they be ashes, and therefore doe I infer, that such Pamphlets doe rather preiudice than profite. Tush (quothe Chawcer) all this is but a peremptorie selle conceit in thine owne humour: for I will shew thee for instance, such sentences as may like the grauest, please the wifest, and instruct the youngeste and wantonneست, and they be these: first of the disposition of women.
Sentences collected out of the Authours bookes.

Quid leuius bruto?* fulmen, quid fulmine? flamma,
Quid flamma? mulier, quid muliere? nihil.

1 Be not ouertaken with the beautie of women,
whose eies are fram'd by art to enamour,
and their hearts by nature to inchant.

2 Women with their falfe teares know their
due times, and their sweete woordes pearce deeper
than sharpe swordes.

3 Womens faces are lures, there beauties are
baites, their lookes nets, their wordes charmes, and
all to bring men to ruine.

4 A hard favoured woman that is renowned for
hir cha/ftitie is more honorable than she that
is famous for her beautie.

5 She which holdeth in her eie moft coynes,
hath oft in her heart moft dishonesty.

6 A woman may aptly bee compared to a
Roafe, for as we cannot enjoy the fragrant smell
of the one without prickles: so wee cannot
posseffe the vertues of the other, without some
shrewish conditions.

7 Though Women haue small force to over-
come men by reaason; yet haue they good fortune
to vnder-mine men by policie.

* Altered in pen and ink to 'vento.'
8. Womens paines are more pinching, if they bee girded with a frumpe, than if they be galled with a mischiefe.

9. The ready way to fier a woman to desire, is to crossé the with disdaine.

10. Some women haue their loues in their lookes, which taken in with a gafe, is thrust out with a wincke.

11. Womens eares are not their touchstones, but their eies: they see and make choyce, and not heare and fancy.

12. Women oft resemble in their loues the Apothecaries in their Art, which choose the weeds for their shops, when they leave the flowers in the field.

13. Euerie looke that women lend is not loue, nor euerie smile in their face is not a pricke in their bosome.

14. Womens hearts are full of hoales, apt to receive, but not to reteine.

15. The Closets of womens thoughts are euer open, & the deapth of their heart hath a string that stretcheth to their tongues end.

16. A woman is like Fortune standing vpon a Gloabe, winged with the feathers of ficklenes.

17. Womens heartes are the Exchequers where fancye yeelds vp hir accounts.

18. Women, be they chaft, be they curteous,
be they constant, be they rich, renowned, honest, wise: yet have they sufficient vanities to counter-vail their vertues.

19 Women's excellency is discovered in their constancie.

20 As the glittering beames of the Sunne when it ariseth, decketh the Heauens: so the glittering beautie of a good wife adorneth the house.

How saieft thou Gower, quoth Chaucer to these sentences? are they not worthie graue eares, and necessarye for young mindes? is there no profit in these principles; is there not flowers amongst weedes, and sweete aphorismes hidden amongst effeminate amours? Are not these worthie to eternize a mans fame, and to make the memoriall of him lasting? I cannot deny quoth Gower, but the sayings are good, both pleasant and Satyricall: but if they had beeene placed in an other humor, how much more had they beeene excellent? for is not a Diamond placed in gould, more pretious, then set in Copper? and sentences in a matter of import, higher valued, then thrust in amongst vaine trifles? If ripe wits would consider what glory redounds by deepe studies, they would neuer busie their braines about such super-ficiall vanities. Tush, quoth Chaucer, it behooues a Scholler to fit his Pen to the time and persons,
and to enter with a deepe insight into the humours of men, and win them by such writings as best wil content their fancies, I tell theee

*Omne tulit punctum, qui miscuit utile dulci:*

What, a pleafant tale ftoft full of conceit, bréedes delight to the eare, and pierceth into the thoughts: *Demofthenes* when he could not perfwade the Athenians with his long and learned Orations, drew them to withfand *Phillip* with a merry Fable. And *Alcibiades* wrought more amongst his Souldiers with his pleafant allufions, then with all his graue exhortations: for proffe *Gower* thou fhalt heere me tell a tale for the fuppreffing of ielalousie, which tell mee how thou likeft when thou haft heard it. With that hee fæt him downe, and fo did *Gower*: and I in the midft was verie attentiuue.

*Chawcers tale of Iealousie.*

Here dwelled in Grandchefter hard by Cambridge, a man called *Tomkins*, a Wheelewright he was, and fuch a one as liued by his art, who being a young man and vnmarried, held it a religion euery funday to frolifike it in the Church yarde: his doublet was of leather, ruffleted after the best fashion, faire truft afore with a doozen, and a halfe of Pewter
Buttons: a Jerkin of Graye Carfey, with a tagd welt of the owne, and because his dublet was new, his fleues hung downe verie properly: a round flop of white, with two guards about the pocket hole, gracht with a long stock, that for wearing at the knee were fencft with two peeces of a Calues skinne: his Ruffe was of fine Lockeram, stitcht very faire with Couentrie blew: a Gréene Hat fresh from the Haberdashers, tyed vp before, and a brooch of Copper, wherein Saint George sate verye well mounted.

Thus Tomkins came ruffling amongst the wenches to the Churchyard, where he was alwayes foregallant of the Countrie gambals, performing his charge with such a grace, that the proudest wenche in all the parish would fauour him with her Napkin. The Bee flies so long amongst the flowers, that at last he lights on one: and Tomkins could not touche the fier so oft, but he must warme: put Flaxe and Fire together, and they will flame: and so proper a Squire could not court it so oft among so many faire maides, but at last he was caught by the heele, and ouer the shooes forsooth in loue, and with whome? with a Maide that every daye wente to sell Creame at Cambridge.

A bonnie Lasse she was, verye well tuckt vp in a Ruffet Petticoate, with a bare hemme, and
no Fringe, yet had sheee a Red lace, and a Stomacher of Tuft Mockado, and a Partlet cast ouer with a prittie whippe, and dreft she was/ in a Kerchiffe of Holland, for her Father was a Farmer: her girdle was greene, and at that hung a large Leather Purse with faire threaden Taffels, & a new paire of yellow gloues, tufted with redde rawe Silke verie richly: and forsooth this Maides name was Kate: her did Tomkins loue, insomuch that many lookes past betwéene them, and many wooings, that at laft he brake the matter to her, and she that was old enough to giue an answere, said: if he could get her Fathers good will, she was content. At this Tomkins strooke the bargaine vppe with a kiffe, and fought opertunitie to meet with her Father to breake the matter vnto him. At laft Fortune so fauoured, that her Fathers Axletree broake as he was carrying manure to the ground, whereupon he was faine to pul foorth his horses, and in all post hast to send for Tomkins, and forsooth Kate must be the woman to fetch the Wheele-right: Away she goes, and as she went, smug'd her selfe vp with her harding Aporne, and comes to Tomkins house, whome shee found luffie at his worke: she saluted him, & he down with his Axe, and gaue her a welcome: she did her mesage, and he left all workes and went with
her. As she came to her father's house, he went about his work, and made him a newe Axeltrée: when he had done, he was bidden come in and drink, and her father drew forth his purse and pleased him for his pains. Tomkins, that thought nowe to bewray the matter, putting his Axe vnder his arme, desired the old man hee might haue a woord with him: to whome hee discoursed the whole matter as concerning his Daughter. Hee heard him like an olde Foxe, and considered Tomkins was a yong man and a thriftie, and had a good occupation, and therefore hee could not haue a fitter matche. Whereupon, after some prattle betwenee them, all was agreed, and the marriage day was set downe: Against which, the Tailor of the Towne had worke enough for the Bride and Bride-groomes apparell, and many a Goose and many a Pig lost their life against that day. Well, on a Sunday it was, and the maids flockt to Kates fathers house, striving to make the Bride handsome, who had a fresh Gowne of home-spun Cloath, and was very finelie dizond in a little Cappe, and a faire paste: the Glouer fould two doozen of two peny Gloues, which she gaue to her friends, and I warrant you Tomkins house was as full of lustie Gallants, that tooke care to set out their Bridegroome all new from top to toe, with a
paire of greene Garters tyed crosse aboue the knée, and a doozen of Crewell Points that set out his hose verie faire. Thus with a branche of Rosemarie marched Tomkins to the Church, where Kate and he met: and there, to be breefe, they were marryed: well that daye was past with dauncing and Honney moone it was for a moneth after: Tomkins did little worke, for he had enough to do to looke on his faire wife: yet she went as she was woonte when she was a Maide to Cambridge with her Creame: but Tomkins on a day, considering that Schollers were mad fellows, began to be ialious, leaft some of them might teach his Wife Lodgick, so that he cut hir off from that vaine, and tyed hir to hir Distaffe, and caused hir to sit by him as hee wrought.

Long were they not married, but seeing his Wife was the fayrefte in all the parrish, and noting that diuers of his neighbours did vse to his house, he began to wax iealous, in so much that euer looke she caft, he thought to be loue, and if she smilde it went to his heart, for hee thought it was a fauour. Thus Tomkins grew almost mad, and yet durft not wrong his Wife, because hir father was one of the cheefe men in all the parish, and beseide his wife was so honest, as he could finde her in no fault: yet thus smoothering his
owne suspicion he liued in a second hell, not daring to let his wife go out of his sight, and scarce trusting his owne eyes. Kate was not so simple but she could perceiue it, and gréeued, that without cause she was so wrongd, yet poore wench she conceald her gréefe with patience, and brookt his suspicion, till she might with credit reuenge: for causelesse ielousie is the greatest breathe to a womans honestie: I knowe not how she dealt with the Wheelewrite, but a Scholler of Trinitie Hoftell Vitiuit Glicerium, and made poore Tomkins looke ouer the pale like a Buck in seafon. Women haue their shifts, and if they be willing, they haue as many inchauntments as euer Cyrces had, to turne men into hornd beafls. Still was Tomkins suspitious, but fault he could finde none, for Kate was a warie wench, and the Scholer had taught hir Si non caeste, tamen caute: But his ielousie still stucke in her stomacke, that on a time she desired the Scholer to deuise some meane how he might rid her husband of his fonde suspicion: let that alone for me, quoth the Scholer, take no care, before sunday at night ile make him finge a new fonge: Kate went home, and to hir wheele she goes, and makes much of hir Tomkins, who vpon Friday next caryed his wife to hir fathers, and commanded hir to stay there while he went to Cambridge, and came againe: she
obeyed his charge, and away goes hee towards the good towne. By the way as he went, in a dump studying on the beautie of his wife, feeding himselfe with his iealous humor, he ouertooke a Scholer, to whome he gaue the time of the daye: Welcome friend quoth the Scholer, where do you dwell? Sir quoth he, at next towne at Granchefter: at Granchefter man quoth hee, I am glad I met thee, now shall I laugh a little: I pray thee tell me freend, haue you not a Wheele-wright that dwels there? they call him Tomkins: yes marrie fir quoth he, I am his next neighbor, I pray you what of him? if thou dwelt fo neere, I maruel (quoth he) thou doost aske? why hee married bonnie Kate of Granchefter, that soule Creame: and now he is the moste famous Cuckould in all the countrey. This went as colde as a stone to Tomkins heart, yet because hee would learne all, he conceald the matter, and bare it out with a good countenance, and said that although he dwelt at the next doore, yet he never heard so much. Ile tell thee man, quoth the Scholler, for a Quarte of Wine, Ile shew thee, the next time shee comes to towne, with whome she is familiarlie acquainted: Marrie quoth he, and at the next Tauerne, Ile bestow it on you, and to morrow comes lustie Kate to Cambridge, and if you do me so much fauour,
ile bestow a dish of Apples on you, to eate these winter evenings: the Scholler thankt him, & to the wine they went, & the next day Tomkins was appointed to come to Trinitie Hostell to such a Chamber: vppon which conclusion he did his businesse and home he went. He bare out the matter with a good face, although he was full of choller in his hart, & could not sleepe, to thinke S. Luke was his Patron. But the next morning early hee bad his wife make her ready to goe to market, for he was not well, and keepe his bed hee would till she came againe. Kate start vp and made her selfe verie handsome, and suspected there was some thing in the winde: Well, to Cambridge she must, for it was her husbands charge, and away shee went. No sooner was shee out of the dores, but vp got he and made him selfe readie, tooke the key in his pocket, and crost another way to Cambridge, that hee was seene of none, and to Trinity Hostell he goes, and found out the Scholler: who bad him welcome, thankt him for his wine, and tould him you are come in a good hower, for follow me and I will shew you where your wife and a Scholler are now making merrie together. The matter before was debated amongst them how poor Tomkins should be handled. Wel the Scholer brought him secreatly to a Chamber windowe, where looking
in, he might see his wife sitting upon a Schooler's lap eating of a pound of Cherries: scarce could hee keepe his tongue from railing out, but at the Schooler request hee bridled it and put it vp with patience. Well, home hee would to prouide for his wiuers welcome, but the Scholer tould him hee shoulde drinke first, and filling him out drinke, gave him a Dormitarie potion, that after he had talked a little, he fell in a dead sleepe: then went the Scholer in and fetcht Kate out, and shewed her her husband. Merrie they were, and past away the time while it was late in the night, & then they heaued vp Tomkins on a horse backe, and carried him home to his house, vndreft him, and laid him in his bed, & though it were late, Katherine cald her mother vp, & reueld the whole matter to her. The old beldame laught, and said, the iealous fool was wel serued. Wel the Schoolers had good chéere made them, and away they went, and the Mother and the daughter fette vppe a watching Candle, and late verie mannerly by a good fier, looking when Tomkins should wake. About /midnight, the drinke left his ope-
ration, and he suddenly awoke, and starting vp, swore by gogs nownes, you arrant whore, ile be reuengde vpon thee: with that his mother and his wife stept to him, and said, what chéere sonne, fie leaue such idle talke and remember God:
naye you whore (quoth Tomkins) ile be reuengd both on you and your knaue scholler. Daughter quoth the olde Beldam, goe for more neighbours, he begins to raue: good Sonne leaue these words, and remember Chrift: with that Tomkins lookt about, began to call himselfe to remembrance, and saw hee was in his bed, with a Kercher on his head, watcht by his mother and his wife, maruelled how he should come from Cambridge, that in this mafe he lay a long while, as in a trance: at laft he said, alas where am I? Marrie husband (quoth Kate) in your own house, and in your owne bed, sicke God helpe you: why (quoth he) and was I not at Cambridge to day? at Cambridge man alas, when I came home, I found you héeere, and my mother sitting by you, very sicke: and so you continued till within this hower, and then you fell in a slumber: why but quoth Tomkins, was I not at Cambridge this day, and saw thee in Trinitie hostell? In Trinitie Hostell, trust me (quoth she) I was not there this two yeere, and for your being at Cambridge, God helpe you, I pray God you were able to go thether. Whie Mother (quoth he) make me not mad, asloone as my wife went to Cambridge, I start vp, made me readie, and went to Trinitie hostell, and there saw I hir with these eies, sitting vpon a Schollers knée, eating
of a pound of Cherries. Well Husband (quoth Kate) and how came you home againe? I marrie (quoth he) their lyes the question: I know well of my going thether, and of my being there, but of my returne, why I remember nothing. No I thynke so poore man (quoth she) for all this day haft thou beene a sick man, and full of broken flumbers and strange dreames: I will tell thee Sonne this disease is a mad bloud that lies in thy head, which is growne from iealousie, take heed of it, for if it should continue but fixe dayes, it would make thee starke mad, for it was nothing but an idle and a iealous fancie, that made thee thinke thou wert at Cambridge, and sawest thy wife there: and was I not then out of my bed, quoth he? no God helpe you, quoth the Mother. Then wife quoth he, and he wept, I aske both God and thee forgiuences, and make a vowe, if God graunt me health, neuer heere after to suspect thee: thou shalt go whether thou wilt, and keepe what companie thou wilt, for a iealous minde is a second hell. Thus was Tomkins brought from his suspition and his wife and hee reconcilde.

What saiest thou quoth Chawcer to this tale? is there any offence to be taken? is it not a good inuictue against iealousie? Sauf vostre
grace, quoth John Gower, sir Jeffrey, your tale is too scurrulous, and not worthie to trouble my graue eare: such fantastical toyes be in the Cobler of Canterbury, and that bred the booke such discredit: call you this a method to put downe any particular vice, or rather a meanes generally to fet vp vanitie? this is the sore that creepes into the minde of youth, and leaues not fretting till it be an incurable vlcer: this is the rust that eateth the hardeft Steele, and cannot be rubd off with the pureft Oyle. Mens mindes are apt to follies, and prone to all such idle fancies, and such bookes are Spurres to pricke them forwarde in their wickednesse, where they neede sharpe bits to bridle in their wanton affections: cannot the Phisition value a maladie, without vnder a poysoned and pleasant sиропe, he hide a medicinable potion, when the operation of the one shall doo more preiudice, then the vertue of the other can worke profit? Shall I in such sharpe hookes lay aluring baites? shall I seeke to drawe men from dancing with a Taber, to perswade men to peace with weapons, or exhort men to vertuous actions with tales of wanton affections? no Greene, marke John Gower wel, thou haft write no booke well, but thy Nunquam sera est, and that is indifferent Linsey Wolsey to be borne, and to be praifed and no more: the
reft haue sweete phrares, but fower follies: good
precepts tempered amongst idle matter, Eeles
amongst Scorpions: and Pearles, strowed amongst
pibbles: beleue not Sir Geoffrey Chawcer in this:
marke but his madde tale to put downe Iealousie,
I will tell a tale to the fame effect, and yet I
hope, neither fo light of conceipt, nor fo full of
scurrilitie.

John Gowers tale against Iealousie.

In the citie of Antwerpe, there dwell'd
a gentleman of good parentage, called
Alexander Vandermaes, who beeing in-
dued with Lands and liuings, such as were able
to maintaine an honest port, thought not with the
Cedar to die fruitles, nor to end his name with
his life, and therefore to haue a priuate friende
with whome to communike his thoughtes, and
issue to maintaine the fame of his house, he
thought to wed him self to some good wife with
whose beauty he might delight his eie, & with
whose vertues hee might content his mind. At
laft looking about, hee sawe manie faire and well
featured, but they had faults that bred his mislike:
Some thought to amend Nature with Art, and
with Apothecaries drugges, to refine that which
God had made perfect: Such artificiall paintings
he likt not, as being the instances of pride. Some
had their eies full of Amours, caifting their lookes with such alluring glaunces, that their verie immodestie appeared in their eie-lids: those hee held too forwarde to the fift: Some had delight to heare themselues chat, and had more talke in their tongues, than witte in their heads: those he counted for Goffeps, and let them slip: taking thus a narrow view of the maides of Antwerpe. At laft he spied one amongst the rest, who was faire, moderft, filent, and generallie indued with all vertues, as highly commended through all the Cittie for her chaftitie, as she was praifed for her beautie. Vpon her did Alexander caft his eie, and so fixe his heart, that he began entirely to affect her, knowing what a preitious iewell he shoulde haue, if he got so vertuous a wife: For he had read in Iefus Syrache, that happie is that man that hath a vertuous wife, for the number of his dayes shalbe double. A vertuous woman dooth make a joyfull man, and whether he be riche or poore, he may alwaies haue a merrie heart. A woman that is filent of toung, shame-faft in countenance, sober in behauiour, and honest in condition, adorned with vertuous qualities cor-respondent, is like a goodly, pleafant Flower, deckt with the coullers of all the Flowers in the Field, which shal be giuen for a good portion, to such a one as feareth God.
These sayings made Alexander an earnest tutor to Theodora, for so was the Maidens name: and so followed his purposed intent, that not onely he obteyned the good will of the Maide, but the consent of her parents, so that in short time there was a marriage, not onely concluded, but fully consumated. These two agreed together louingly, and in such loyaltie, that all Antwerpe talked of the affection of the one, and the obedience of the other, and the loue of both: luying in this concord, the deuill that grudged at the sinceritie of Iob, greeued at the mutuall amitie of these two, and sought to set them at oddes, which he attempted with the pernitious fier of Ielousie, a plague that offereth deepest wrong to the holy estate of marriage, and setteth forth such mortall variance, as hardly by any meanes can be pacified. Where married couples agree together, it is a great happinesse, and a thing very acceptable in the sight of God: but as in musick are many discords, before there can be framed a true Diapasin, so in wedlock are many iarres, before there be established a perfect friendship: Falling out there may be, and wordes may growe betweene such sweete friends: but

Amantium iræ amoris redinte gratia est:

Marrie where Ielousie enters by stelth, from
hence he cannot be thrust out by force. This pestilent humor entred into the minde of Alexander, for seeing he had the fayrest wife in all Antwarpe, & that many Marchants resorted to his house, he found that women are weake vessels, and conceited a Jealous opinion without cause, thinking such as came to enter parle with him for traffike, come rather for the beautie of his wife, then for any other trade of Marchandize, in so much that hee pind her vp in her Chamber, and kept himselfe the Key: not content with this, fitting one day in a great dumpe he fell into this meditation.

Alexander Vandermaeft, his ieadious meditation with himselfe.

Hou haft married thy selfe Alexander, to a Woman, and therefore to a thing light and inconstant, whose heart is like to feathers blowne abroad with every winde, & whose thoughts aime at euery new obie\textsuperscript{f}: thou mightst Vandermaeft haue foreseene this, for thou haft red that Armins of Carthage being earnestly persuaded to marry, answered, I dare not; for if I chance vpon one that is wife, shee will be wilfull: if wealthie, then wanton: if poore, then peeuish: if beautifull, then proude: if deformed, then loathsome: and the leaft of these is able to kill a thousand men. Why Alexander did thou
not eschew this, foreseeing this, and knowing them to bee such euils? why didn't thou loade thy selfe with such a heauie burden, oh howe art thou changed? what motion hath madded thee with this conceit? thou wert woont to say that they were Heauens wealth, and earths miracles, adorned with the singularitie of proportion, to shrowd the excellencie of all perfection, as farre exceeding men in vertues, as they excell them in beauties, resembling Angels in qualities, as they are like to Gods in perfection, being purer in minde then in mould, and yet made of the puritie of man: iust they are, as gying loue hir due: constant, as houlding loyaltie more pretious then life, as hardly to be drawne from united affection, as the Salamandiers from the Cauernes of Etna. Oh Alexander, I would they were so, then wert / thou as happy, as now thou art miserable: but no doubt their hearts are made of Iet, that draw vp fancie in a minute, and let it slip in a moment, and their thoughts so fickle, that they couet to feede on every new obiect: they seeke to marrie, that the husband may couer their faults, and like Atheists, they count all pardoned, that is done with secrecie. She riseth vp faith the Wise man, and wipeth her mouth, as though shee had made no offence. No doubt there be such as thou dooest decipher, but torment not thy selfe with
Jealousy, let not thy heart suspect what neither thy eye sees by proofe, nor thine eares heere by reporte, Theodora is vertuous, and chaste, honour dwels in hir thoughts, and modeftie in her eyes, shee treads vpon the Tortufe, and keepees her house, and strayes not abroad with euery wanton giglet: She layes not out the tramels of hir hayre to allure mens lookes: nor is shee wanton in her eye lids, shee seekes not to companie with strangers, nor takes delight in much prattle, but as Susanna was to Ioaichim, and Lucretia to Collatine, so is Theodora to Alexander. She is like to the vertuous Woman which Salomon sets out in the Prouerbes, who eates not her bread with idlenesse: shee is vp earlie and late, labouring gladlie with her hands: she occupies Wooll and Flaxe, layes hould vpon the Distaffe, and puts hir fingers to the Spindle: such a one Alexander is thy Theodora, whome Antwarpe admires for hir vertues, and thou maist loue for her perfection. Such shee seemes indeed, but women are subtill, shewing themselues to disdaine that which they most desire, and vnder the maske of a pure life, shadowe a thousand deceitfull vanities. She is faire, and many eies awaite vpon her beautie, and women are weake creatures, some women.

I see many Marchants flocke to my house, and amongst them all, perhaps she will like one: tush, for
all her fhew of conftancie and vertuous perfection, I will not truft her, nor beleue her, for women are subtile to allure, and slipperie to deceive, hauing their hearts made of waxe ready to receive euery impression: and with this he starte vp, and wente to looke if his wiuues Chamber doore were safe lockt, and so went about his businesse, but so discontent in his thoughts, as all the world might espie his greefe by his passions. Theodora saw all this, and perceiued the folly of her husband, and brookt it with great patience, for that she knew her selfe free from al intended suspition, coueting with her forcible effects of dutie, to race out the cankred rust of Lealousie, that bred such secret and silient iarres betwixt her and her Alexander: pinde vp thus as a hauk in a mew to solace her, she had recourse to her book, aiming in all her Orizons for grace, that her actions might be directed, and the course of her life so leaueld, that no blemish might taint the brightnes of her credit, otherwhile for recreation she would take her Lute in her hand and sing this Ditie.

Theodoras Song.

S Ecret alone, and silent in my bed,
When sollies of my youth doe touch my thought;
And reason tells me that all flesh is sinne,
And all is vaine that fo by man is wrought.
VISION.

Hearts sighes,
Eies teares,
With sorrow throb when in my mind I see,
All that man doth is foolish vanitie.

When pride presents the state of honors pompe,
And seekes to set aspiring mindes on fire;
When wanton Loue brings beauty for a bait,
To scorcht the eie with ouer hot desire.
Hearts sighes,
Eies teares,
VVith sorrow throb when in my mind I see,
That pride and loue are extreame vanitie.

O Loue that ere I loued, yet loue is chaf,
My fancie likt none but my husbands face.|
But when I thinke I loued none but him,
Nor would my thought giue any other grace.
Harts sighes,
Eyes teares,
With sorrow throb, when in my minde I see,
The pureft loue is toucht with Jealousie.

Alas mine eye had never wanton lookes,
A modest blush did euer taint my Cheekes;
If then suspition with a faulse conceipt,
The ruine of my fame and honour seekes,
Harts sighes,
Eyes teares,
Must needs throb sorrows, when my mind doth see,
Chaste thoughts are blamd with causelesse ielousie.

My husbands will was ere to me a lawe,
To please his fancie is my whole delight;
Then if he thinkes whatsoeuer I do is bad,
And with suispition chastitie requight:
Harts sighes,
Eyes teares,
Must needs throb sorrows, when my minde dooth see,
Duty and love are quit with ielousie.

No deeper hell can fret a woomans minde,
Then to be tainted with a falsé susept;
Then if my constant thoughts be ouercroft,
When pratling fond, can yeeld no true susept.
Harts sighes,
Eyes teares,
Must needs throb sorrows, when my minde dooth see,
Duty and love are quit with ielousie.

Seeke I to please, he thinkes I flatter then,
Obedience is a couer for my fault;
When thus he deemes I tread my shoo awrie.
And going right, he still suspefts I halt,
VISION.

Harts sighes,
Eyes teares,
Must needs throb sorrows, when my minde doth see,
Dutie and love are quit with iealousie.

No value I haue to cure this restleffe soare,
But sighes to God, to change his iealous minde;
Then shall I praise him in applauding himns,
And when the want of this mistrust I finde:
     Harts sighes,
     Eyes teares,
Shall cease, and Lord ile onely pray to thee,
That women neare be wrongd with Iealousie.

Theodora hauing ended her Dittie, layde by her Lute, and sate in a mufe, when diuers Merchants came in to aske for her husband: amongst the rest, one was verye pleasant with the Maide of the house, and fell to prattle with her, in which Instant Alexander comming in, and seeing them in secret and priuate talke (and the Merchant with a letter) began straignt to mistrust that the Gentleman was communing with his maide for the deliuerie of some amourous letter to her Mistres: wherevpon he began to enter into such a frantike, as hee regarded not the salute of his friends, but seemed like a mad man, not answering according to their demaunds, but in such abrupt
replies, that all of them espied the man to be paffing passionate, thinking some fond humor fo infected his braine, that he would growe lunatike: wherevpon after some short parle with him, they all departed, and tooke their leaue, leauing him deepe perplexed in his deepest thoughts: first he went and lookt if the doore were faft, which he found as strongly lockt as he left it, then hee questioned with his maide about the talke and the letter, she discourst vnto him all the truth, but in vaine, for so deeply had fuspition grafted mistrust in his conscience, that beleefe could take no place, but that his heart suspected, that he thought verely/to be as sure as the Gospell, for who so is pained with the restless torment of ielousie, doubteth all, mistrusteth himselfe, being always frozen with feare, and fired with fuspition: With this canckred poison was the minde of Alexander so corrupt, as he thought verily his wife had played faff, and that he being blinde, had eaten the flie: wherevpon he studied how to quittance hir villanie: so heauie an enemie is Ielousie to the holy estate of matrimony, sowing betwéene the married couples such deadly seedes of secret hatred, that loue being once raced out by facklesse distrust, through enuie there ensueth a desire of bloudie reuenge: and so it fell out with Alexander: but that God which defendeth th
innocent, shrowded guiltlesse Theodora vnder his wings, and kept hir from the peremptorie resolu-
tion of her frantike husband. Well, at laft iealousie entered so farre into his thought, that he fell into a Lunatike melancholie, and like a mad man fled out of his house, and ranne about the Fields, haunting secret Groues, and solitarie places to feeede his humour. The report of this strange chance, was bruted abroade throughout all Antwerpe, which made men to wonder at the matter: some had hard opinion of Theodora, and said her lewdnesse bred his frenzy, and that Alexander hauing spied some wanton trick by his wife, fell into that Lunacie, condemning hir for a pernitious courtizan: others seeing the vertuous disposition of the woman, could not be induced to so hard a suspition, but thought the brainsick iealousie of the man had procured that strange maladie: some suspended their judgements both of him and hir, till further triall might make it manifeft, but the most part spake ill of hir, especially his parents and kinsfolke, who reuilde hir, and cald her strumpet, turning her out of doore as a Courtizan deservering no better fauour.

Thus hardly was poore Theodora vfd, who tooke all patiently, and being distreft and wrongd, went to a poore womans house, who vpon meere pittie harboured her: where falling to hir labour,
shee conffyrmed to all good mindes, the affured confidence of vertuous chaftitie: being there poore, changing / her apparel to the place, she went in her white Waftcoat, and fate to her whéele, whereon woorking busily euery day aboue other, noting her innocency, and how vniuiftly shee was accused, shee burst out into teares, and blubbred out this passion.

**Theodoras meditation of her Innocencie.**

Unfortunate Theodora, whose thoughtes are measured with enuy, and whose déedes are weied with fufpition, the prime of thy yeares is nipped with mishappes, and when the blossoms of thy youth should grow to ripe fruits, they are bitten with the froftes of Fortune. When thou wert a maid, modesty hung in thy looks, and thy chaffe thoughts appeared in thy countenaunce, all Antwerpe spoake of thy beautie, and applauded thy vertues, and nowe being a wife, they accufe thee of vanity and lightnesse, wheras thy constancy is as great, and thy chaftity no lesse. Ah, but infamy galleth vnto death, and liueth after death: Tush Theodora, vertue may be blam’d, but neuer sham’d. The Diamond may be hidden in dirt, but neuer loose
his operation: the Sunne may be obscured with a Cloud, but at last it will break forth in his brightnes, and vertue hidden with slander, will at last maugre enuie appeare without blemish. Ah Theodora, but Alexander, thine Alexander, the joy of thy youth, and the content of thy mind is run lunatick, and al for thee I confesse: and my heart gréeues at his mishap, and with daily Orifons I will pray, that his iealous thoughts may be raced out: his parents and friends hould thee for a Curtifan: all Antwerpe wonders at thee, and exclaiemes againft thee for a ftrumpet, the more is my sorrow, & the greater my misery: but the Lord who is Chro*dsognôtes, whose eie sees the secrets of al heartes, sees mine innocency. Oh, but what shall I doe to recover my husbands weale, & recover my former credit: might my bloud/be a faule to cure his malady, or my life ease the sore that so torments him, I would with the hazard of my soule, seeke to recover the weale of his body: and launch out the deereft drops of bloud, to purchase his leaft content. But iealousie that infectious fiend, hath wrought thy bitter bale, and his ytter overthow, setting such a flame of fire in his breaft, as neither reason nor counfaile can quench. What shal I then doe? fit thee down Theodora, and let thy praiers pearce the heauens,

* 'hro' erased by pen and ink, and 'au' inserted.
cry out in the bitternes of mind, take hould of the hemme of Chrifts vesture by faith, and with the blind man say: thou son of David, looke upon the innocency of thy handmaid, redresse her wrongs, and heale the malady of her husband. Orizons Theodora haue wings, and if they bee plumed with the feathers of an assured believe in Christ his passion, they flie fast through the farthest spheres, and penetrate eu'n the throane of his maiefty: and that they plead for grace, from whence by the helpe of the lambe, who fits there a Mediator for vs, they returne not without regard. Do this first Theodora, then fit thee downe to thy worke, and with thy hands thrift, satisifie thy harts thirst. Forget thy amours, and fall to labours, and be sure of this, in thy cottage thou shalt shun much envy, and many reproaches: for Fortune feldome lookes so low as pouerty. Content thee with thy estate, for aduerfity is the triall of the mind, and mishap is the ballance of the thoghts. Vfe patience, for it is a great prove of vertue and be not feene abrode: for secrecy kils infamy, and such as delight to bee feene, shall haue their credit toucht with many tongues, and haue this verfe hung on their backe.

SpeStatum veniunt, veniunt speulentur ut ipsae.

Thus liuing poorely, content: and patient in
thy labours, Antwerpe shall thinke it was thy husbands folly, not thy vanity.

Thus Theodora satisfied her selfe with her own perfection, & in the cottage shund the stormes that Fortune inflicted vpon great mansions, as she thus rested happy, for that

Fœlix qui potuit contentus vivere paruo.

Alexander romed vp and downe still perplexed with his /jealous passions, and finding no ease in his conscience: for jealousie is like the biting of Hidaspis, which suffers a man to take no sleepe: Lunatike he was, and yet fundrie times he would both reasonablie meditate with himselfe, and confer with others, sorrowing at the fondnesse of his owne suspition: but straight againe hee would with the Dog returne to his vomit, and fall to his ould vayne of frenzie, with generall exclamations against beautie: yet so sententious, that amongst the rest I remember some of his principles; which seemed rather the cenfure of some ripe wit, then the fruites of any Lunacie, and they as I remember be these.

*Alexanders sentences in his Lunacie,*

*against beautie.*

A H, beautie is a vaine thing, whose paintings are trickt vp with times coullers, which
being set to dry in the Sunne, loose their brightness with the Sunne.

2 Beautie is a Charme, worse then Cyrces had amongst hir confections, for it first inchaunteth the eye, then bewitcheth the heart, and at last brings both to utter ruine, when of it selfe it is but like the Flower Asautis, that looseth couller with euery lowde winde.

3 Beautie draweth many mens eyes to looke on so gorgeous an obie\textcup, and is oft the cause of manye difhonest actions.

4 Beauty is delightsome and pleasant, yet nothing more perilous and deadlie.

5 The more beautie, the more pride, the more pride, the more inconstancie.

6 Beautie, when it is not ioynde with vertue, is like the fethers of a Phenix, plac\textcup on the car-kasse of a Crowe.

7 Beautie is oft the fairest marke that leadeth to mifhaps.

8 Beautie is a couller da\textcupt with euery breath, a flower mixt with euery frost, and a fauor that time & age defaceth.

These sententious and satyrycall inuectuies against beautie, did he breath out in his madnesse, which seemed hee was more melancholie then Lunatike: well howsoever, about he ran restlesse
VISION.

and passionate, till on a day, comming into a meadow, he saw in a little houell made with boughes, an aged man sittting, houlding a serpent in his hand, that with hir teeth stil bit hir selfe, and stil the aged father smilde. Alexander standing by, and seeing this, as mad as he was, marueld at the matter, and upon a suddaine said: Father what doost thou meane by that embleame? The ould man turning his head, and seeing Alexander, was nothing abaft but replyed: My Sonne quoth he, I am viewing the Enugmaticall figure of Ielowsie: of Ielousie quoth Alexander? as how? marrie quoth he, thus. Thou seest this Serpent, it is bred in the Cauernes of Sicillia, brought from thence, and given me by a marchant, the name of it is a Limifter: marke how Nature hath made it full of splene and choller, stil intending to doo, and restlesse to reuenge: but so hath the cerious workman of all prouided, that it can bite nor preiudice no creature but it selfe, which disposition when I considered, I compard it to a iealous man, who being pinched with that passion, hurteth none but himselfe, and galled with suspition, biteth with the Lemifter his owne flesh: for I tell thee my sone whosoever is fired with iealousie, or toucht with that hatefull passion of mistrust, he fretteth inwardly, taketh no rest, & consumes himself with inward greefe, hurting none but himselfe, as
conteyning all the miserie within himselfe. Ah Alexander quoth he, I know thee, and sorrow that I see thee thus fond, to be brought into such dishonor, by the suspicion of a woman, when being Jealous of hir, thou wringest thy selfe at the heart: when thou hurtst not her little finger, if thou couldest conceit what it were, and knewst the secret operation and inward prejudice, thou wouldst shake it off, as a toye worthless a man of such calling. Antwerpe I tell thee pitties thee as they loue thee, and wonders at thee, as they note thy follies, and are angrie at thee, as thou perseverest in so vaine an humour: and because thou shalt haue an insight by me into the follie of thine owne humor, I will set thee downe the description of jealousie: wherein, as in a glasse thou maist perceive thine owne madding passions.

The ould mans description of jealousie.

Elousie is a canckar, that freteth the quiet of the thoughts, a moath that secretly consumeth the life of man, & a poyson spatially opposed against the perfections of loue. The hart being once infected with jealousie, the sleepepes are broken: dreames, disquiet flumbers, thoughts, cares, and sorrows: the life woe and myserie, that liuing he dies, and liuing
prolongs out his life in passions worse than death. None looketh on his loue, but suspicion saies this is he, that commeth to be contriuall of my fauours: none knocks at his doore, but starting vp he thinks them messengers. None talkes, but they whisper of affection: if she frowne, she hates him, and loues others: if she smile, it is because she hath had successe in hir loues: looke she frowardlye on any man, she dissembles: if she fauour him with a gratious eye, then as a man tainted with a frenzie, he cryes out, that neither fier in the strawe, nor loue in a womans lookes can be conceald. Thus dooth he liue restlesse, maketh loue that oft is sweett, to be in taste as bitter as gall, and consumes himselfe with secret torments.

How faift thou my sonne (quoth the ould man) haue I not hit thee in the right vaine, and made a perfect description of thine owne patheticall humours. Oh quoth Alexander, and he sat him downe with teares in his eyes, and sighes, in such sort, and so deepliy strained, as his heart was ready to burft. Now Father, and never before now, doe I see into the depth of mine owne follies, and perceiue how unfortunately this Ielowsue conceit hath led me: but teach me, how shall I shake of this fiend, that so mortally haunts me? by what meanes / shall I race out this passion, that so paines
me: and haue the disquiet of my thoughts satisfied. Oh my Sonne (quoth the ould man) thou art commaunded by the wife man; not to be iealous ouer the wife of thy bosome, leaft shee showe some shrewd point of wickednesse vppon theee: for nothing more gréeueth an honest woman, nor draweth more aptly to some mortall resolution, then to be suspected without cause. And I tell theee my Sonne, Antwerpe hath euer spoken well of thy wife, whatsoeuer thou haft misconftred. Thou haft then doone amisse, in absenting thy selfe from her, for thou art chargde not to departe from a good and discreet woman that is fallen vnto theee for thy portion, in the feare of the Lord: for the guift of hir honeftie is aboue gould. A woman of fewe wordes, is a guift of God: and to a well nurtured Maide may nothing be comparde. An honest and mannerly woman, is a guift aboue other guifts: and there is no weight to bee comparde to a womans minde, that can rule it selfe: like as the cléere light vpon the holy Candlestickes, so is the beautie of the face vpon an honest body: like as the goulden pillers vpon the sockets of siluer, so are the faire legs vpon a woman that hath a constant minde.

A faire Wyfe reioyfeth her husband, and a man loueth nothing better: but if shee be louing and vertuous withall, then is not her husband like to
other men. He that hath gotten a vertuous woman, hath a goodly possession, she is vnto him a helpe and piller on whome he refteth: where no hedge is, there the goods are spoiled, and where no Husband is, there the friendlesse mourneth. Dooest thou marke my Sonne these Sentences? if thou hast so good a wife: oh how hast thou sinned, to wrong hir with Ieloufie: to taint thine honor, and to blemish the credit of her chaftitie. If she bee wanton, and wyll neuer wante one: but sitteth downe as Syrach faith, and openeth hir Quiuer to euery Arrowe, then my Sonne shake her off, abide not with such a woman, leaft yee feele the force of the lawe: but bee not jealous, for that breedes thy fatall ruine, and to her is no prejudice. Oh Father (quoth he) these wordes, as they pierce to the quicke, so are they Balme to my distressed soule: I feele a comfort in the sweetnesse of your counfaile, and these principles are perswafiue arguments to race out my former follies. I mußt of force confesse, that I married her a Maid, famoufed through all Antwerpe for her vertue, as shee was spoken of for her beautie. And beeing married, I found her obedient, chaste, modest, and fiuent: but her beautie bred the bane, and was the meanes of all my misery: For when I noted the excellencie of her feature, and the rareness of her perfection,
and considered that every man's eye aimed at so faire an object, that women's hearts were of wax, ready to receive every impression, and saw how diverse Marchants of the citie flocked to my house, then the sting of Jealousie began to torment me, and suspicion brought me into this melancholic humour: I need not paint out in particulars. For Father, thou hast described sufficiently my passions, how I was passionate, onely let this suffice, I was jealous, but whether with cause or no, there lies the question. Were I satisfied in this, I would say, farewell to all fond Jealousie. To ease thee of this martyrdom, my sonne, I will not onely releue thee with counfaile, but aid thee with the effect of my Art. Thou hast beene absent a long while, from thy wife, and all men hold thee still for lunaticke: I having some skill in Negromancie, will change thy countenance into the shape of a most beautiful yong man: being thus metamorphosed, thou shalt go to thy wife, and being now crossed with pouertie, & living poore distrest in Cottage, thou shalt proffer her gold and maintenance, I tel thee my sonne, thou shalt carry with thee two great persuasions, to make breach into a woman's honestie, which is beautie and wealth, chieflie where the partie is pinched with penurie. If she yeelde vnto thee, shake her off as an inconstant Curtifan, and then
be more ieloufe. For what shouldst thou be fuppititious of that which thou knowest? If she withstand, and had rather brooke honest pouertie, than violate her chaftitie, Oh Alexander, then forrowe at thy follies, say thou haft sin'd against so vertuous a wife, and reconcile thy selfe vnto hir, and be not touched any more with ieloufie, for that is a hell to thee, and no hurt to hir. This counfaile did greatlie comfort Alexander, that he not onely humblie thanked the ould man for his aduise, but intreated him to prosectue the intent of his purpose, which he presentlie did, for by his arte he made him seeme a beautifull young man, faire to the eye and well proportioned, but in all forme, farre from that which he was: hauing store of Crownes in his purffe (thus transformed) away he trudgeth towards Antwerpe, where in the fuberbes, hee heard of his wife how she was wrongd by his friends, turned out of doores, and liued there with a widow woman, in a poore cottage: hir fame was good, and the report of her labours were great, her honestie highly valued, and her patience much commended, which greatly comforted the thoughts of Alexander: at laft learning out the house, he went thether, and comming in asked for Theodora, who humblie rofe and faluted him with such modeft curtesie, as did importe a shew of great vertue. Alexander noting
her bashfulnesse, began to consider, that if she plaide false, she was cunning to coyne her countenance, and he fought therefore to trie her thus.

Ayre Mistresse, whom Fortune hath made as miserable, as Nature had formed beautifull, and whom the croffe aspect of the planets, haue left as distreft as the Gods in their fauours haue made vertuous, Know this, that comming as a stranger to Antwerpe, it was tould me by mine hoast, as a wonder, of the extremitie of your husbands iealousie, and the excellencie of your patience: his follies, and your vertues: his suspition, and your constancie. His report made me desirous to see with mine eye, what I heard with mine eare, that I might confirme reporte with a sure witnesse. Now seeing you, and noting your exteriour lineaments, gracef with so manie inward perfections, I praise Nature for hir workemanship, accuse Fortune for her tyrannie, and sorrowe that so beautifull a creature should bee bitten with such bitter croffes.

But necessitie is a sore penance, and extremitye is as hard to beare as death: yet Mistresse Theodora it is a colde comforte, is wrapt in no remedie: a greeuous vlcer, that no Chirurgie can finde a faule for, and a hard sorrow that no reliefe can medicine. Seeing therefore your
husbands iealousie hath left you from friends and many cares, seeke, as you haue hetherto chockt Fortune with patience, so to thwart mishap with a present remedie, and thus it is: Your beautie Mistresse Theodora, is able to content any eye, and your qualities, to satisfaction the most curious minde: which as it doth amase me, so it driues a pittiful compassion into my thoughts to lay any plot for your better estate. Therefore may it please you to vouchsafe of such a friend as my selfe, your want shall be releued, and your necessitie redressed: I will take you from this cottage, to a place more fit for your calling: your rags halbe robes, and your thin diet plenteous fare: and to make vp all fortunate, you shall haue such a friend at your commaund, as no mishap any waye can diuert from your loue. If you stand vpon the losse of your honour, and the blemish of your fame: to answer that obiection, first Antwerpe hath made hazard of your credit, and though without cause, yet they haue calde your name in question, and infamie is such a deepe coloure, that it will hardly be raced out with obliuion: to take you from such vipers as cease not to fling you with the enuie of their tongues: I will carrie you from the reach of them all, and the greatest wonder lafteh but nine dayes, nor will the talke of your departure continue any longer tearmes:
for the offence, why it is loue, and that shadowes wanton scapes: what is doone closelie is halfe pardoned, and affections that are mainteyned with loyaltie, are but slender faults; let not feare of a little fame, tie you still to such extremity: Misery is a malady that ought to haue no respect of medecine, and where necessitie doth breede a soare, foolish is that patient if hee makes doubt to accept of any value. What Theodora your husband is Lunatick, neuer to be hoped for, nor had againe in his right wits: then vouchesafe a friend, who if no other makte will serue, will shadowe all faultes with gould.

Theodora could scarce stay the hearing of such a long discourse, knowing it was prejuditioall to a womans credit, to listen to such prattle, alluding to the French prouerbe.

La ville qui parle, la femme qui s'escoute
L'une se gaigne, l'autre se foute,

Wherevpon she puld her hand from his, and with a modest blush made him answere.

I cannot deny sir, but I haue found Fortune my foe, yet to counteruaile her malice I haue had Patience my friend, and what the world hath obiected with suspition, I haue answered with innocency: for my present misery, as I brooke it with content, so I hope to finde the heauens more
faourable: and for my husbands follies, I counte his present ielousie counteruailde with his former loues, and hope that God will chaunge his opinions into better censures, and make him conceit of me as faourable, as now hee thinkes hardlie. In the meane time sir, your aime is farre beyond the marke, and your compasse directed by a wrong starre: for though I be pinched with wante, and toucht with that fting that forceth many to attempt vnlawfull actions, yet had I rather fit with Cornelia, and satisifie my hunger with handes labours, then frolick it with Lamia, and buy repentance with delicates: no Sir, thinke not that all the pouertie in the world can hale me from the thought of mine ould honour, or any shower of misfortune, drive me from the seate of vertue, better liue in lowe content, then in high infamie: and more pretious is want with honestie, then wealth with discredite: Therefore sir, I thanke you for your proffer, but I am no traffike for such a chapman: but reporte this wheresoeuer you come, that I would scorne a crowne, in respect of constancie, and hould the participation of a kingdome light, in value of my chastity: I tell you sir, though I be a woman, yet the loue that I bear, and the dutie that I owe to my husband howsoever he hath wrongd mee, makes me so resolute, that neyther extremitie shall diswade me from affecting
him, nor any proffer of riches perswade to fancie any other. And wheras you obiect, that my credit is alreadie crafde in Antwerpe, / I denye not but I am suspected, and of moite, wrongde with hard reproches: yet carying a cléere conscience, I haue this hope, that seeing

*Temporis filia veritas*

Time and my good behauiour shal wipe out the blemish of such causelesse infamie, and then shal I shew my self to mine owne honour, and theyr discredit. And whereas you say, that Louers faults are slender offences, I answer: that there can be no greater staine to a woman, then to be toucht with losse of her good name, especially being confirmed and ratified by prooufe: for that being lost, she hath no more whereon to bofte: and that made *Lucretia* let out a pure soule from a defiled body.

Then good Sir, you knowe my minde, my pouertie is my content: mine honor, my wealth: and mine innocencie, the onely thing that is left to quiet my conscience: therefore as your Marte was little, your Market being doone, the doore is open, and you may go when you pleafe.

*Alexander* hearing this was highly contented, yet thought to giue one assault more, and houlding hir faft by the wrest, returned hir a replie thus.
Tuft Miftresse Theodora, women must be coy, and seeme at the first to disdaine that, which after they desire: els might they be thought very light, that would come at every lure. I haue beene a Huntsman, and will not at the first default giue ouer the chace: therefore aduise your selfe better, take time when you will giue me an answere: aske counfaile of your pillowe, I can tell you, good is a goodly thing, and there is not a warmer coate then wealth: what, such faults are checkt with a smyle, not controulde with a frowne, and men smother vp Louers offences with fauour. Be not peremptorie, for in that you shall discouer rather folly then any aduised wisdome, such as haue diseases, and refuse remedie are worthy still to bide in the paine, and they who are ouer the shooes in wante, are worthie the Staffe and the Wallet: if they will not any way reach at wealth. Consider therefore with your selfe, and to morrow this time I will come & craue an answere.

Theodora, hauing her face full of choller, pluckt away her arme, fate her downe to her Wheele, and then reason'd thus roughly with him.

Sir, neuer take any longer daies, where the partie is unwilling to set no further date: nor giue any more attemptes, where the Castle is impregnable, Know, your sute is in vain: and your words breathed into the wind: and to bee
short, take it as you please, I hould your goulde in scorne, and your selfe (vnlesse you were more honest) in disdaine. If you be so passionate, that you must needs haue a Paramour, go seeke suche Lettice where they grow, for heere is none for your lips: you shall not finde heere a Danae that will be drawne in with a shower of golde, but rather a Diana, whome Venus and al her frownes could neuer affright. Therefore take this for a finall answer, if you come any more, you shall find your welcome as bad as may be, and for want of entertainment, you shall doe your account at the doore, and so Sir, if you be a Gentleman, be gone.

This cheared so the hart of Alexander, that in that very momet he left to be jealous, & conceiued such a new loue towards Theodora, that hee could scarce abstaine from imbracing her, but yet he bridled his affection, & seeing he could doe no good, tooke his leave verie courteouslie. Hee was no sooner out of doore, but Theodora rose and shut it. Alexander subtilly stole vnder the window, to heare what shee would say, and according to his expectation, hee heard her say thus to her Landes-Ladie.

Oh (quoth she) and she fetcht a deepe sigh: How doth Fortune frowne, and how is the time iniurious, that men think golde able to bannish
vertue, and Fame to be lesse valued then treasure. Because I am poore, what, dooth Antwerpe thinke, I meane to make sale of my chastitie? and because extreamity hath bitten me by the heele: Do men thinke, pelfe shall draw mee to become a wanton? no, I call him to witnes that knowes mine innocencie. I hould mine honour as deare as my life, and my constancy as pretious, as the apple of mine eie: and though as the wife man writ, the dishonest woman faies, what, we are in the dark and compact in with the wals: feare not, no man can espie vs, yet the eie of the Lord sees al and he searcheth the heart and the raines, and punisheth such offences in iustice: Farre rather had I be openly blamed, being innocent, than haue a good report with a guiltie conscience: for though I be wrongfully accused, yet the Lord is able at all times to raise vp a Daniell that may cleare them that put their truft in him. Pouertie, wante, extreamitie, misfortune, all seeme easie béeing tempered with content and patience: but riches, treasure, prosperitie, and wealth are odious, béeing tainted with the staine of an adulterous name. No Alexander, wherefoeuer thou béeft or whatfoeuer thy Fortune is, or howe so euer thou haft wronged mee, yet thy faults shall not make mee offend, nor thy abuse draw mee to any preiudice: But I will bee loyall Theodora, the
constant wife of Alexander for euer: for in the booke of Wisdome this I read.

\[ O \text{ how faire is a chaste generation with vertue, the memorial thereof is immortal: for it is knowne with God & men, when it is present: men take example therat, and if it go away, yet they desire it: it is always crowned and houlden in honor, & winneth the reward of the univerfall battaile. } \]

With this she cast, and fell to her spinning, and Alexander he went his way to find out the olde man, whome hee found solitarie in his houel. As soone as he cast vp his eie and saw Alexander: Oh my sonne Alexander (quoth he) what newes? Alexander fate him downe and fetching a deepe sigh, said, father, I haue finned, and wronged my wife with a false suspect: / Now doe I find, that she that loueth loyally, may wel be croft with calamity, but neuer iustly accused of inconstancie: suspition may put in a false plea, but proffe neuer maintained the action, and with that he discours'd from point to point, how he had dealt with Theodora, what proffers, what answers, and what she said in his absence. The olde man at this was very glad, and demaunded of him, howe hee felt himselfe from his former franticke humour? quight
shaken off (quoth Alexander) and therefore now pull off your enchantment, that I may returne to my former shape, and home to my wife, which hee did, and after many good instructions (glad that hee had recalld him from his ievalusie) hee tooke his leaue of Alexander, who trimming vp himselfe like a pilgrime, departed towards Antwerpe, and in the euening comming thither, went to his Father's house. Assoone as he came in and was espied, they all ranne away as afraid of him: But when with reverence his Father saw him doe his duty, hee entertained him with teares, and demaunded of him, how he farde? Alexander said wel, and set downe by him, and discoursed to him at large all his fortunes, his meeting with the olde man, and what hadde happened, still crying at euery sentence, how he had wrong'd his louing Theodora: At this glad newes all his friends and kinfesfolkes were sent for, and there at a solempe supper, the discourse of all was declared vnto them: They reioysed at his happy metamorphosis, and sorrowed at the hard abuse they offered to Theodora.

But to make amends, the next day there was a great feast prouided, and all the chiefe of Antwerpe bidden thither as guests. Theodora was sent for, her husband and she reconciled, set in her former estate, held in great estimation for her constancy, and her husband euer after fre from all suspitious ievalusie.
Now Sir Geoffrey Chawcer (quoth Gower) how like you this tale? is it not more full of humanity, then your vain and scurrulous invention? and yet affecteth as muche in the mind of the hearers? are not graue sentences as forcible, as wanton principles? tush (quoth Chawcer) but these are not plechant, they breed no delight, youth will not like of such a long circumstance. Our English Gentlemen are of the mind of the Athenians, that will sooner bee persuaded by a fable, than an Oration: and induced with a merrie tale, when they will not be brought to any compasse with serious circumstances. The more pittie (quoth Gower) that they should bee so fond, as to be subject to the delight of every leud fancy, when the true badge of a Gentleman, is learning ioyned with vallour and vertue, and therefore ought they to read of Martiall Discipline, not of the flight of Venus: and to talke of hard labours, not to chat of foolish and effeminate amoures. Aristotle read not to Alexander wanton Elegies, but he instructed him in Morall precepts, and taught how to gourner like a King, not how to court like a lover: But now a daies, our youthes desire to read amourous pamphlets, rather then Philosophicall actions, and couet like Epicures rather to passe the time in some pleasant fable, then like Philosophers to spend the day in profitable Aphorismes: but when
the blacke Oxe hath trode on their foot, and that age hales them on to olde yeares, and the Palme tree, as the Preacher saies, waxeth white, then will they repent those howers they haue spent in tosling ouer fuch fruitlesse papers. Therefore Greene take this of me, as thou haft written many fond workes, so from henceforth attempt nothing but of worth: let not thy pen stoope so low, as vanity, nor thy wit be so far abused to paint out any precepts of fancie, but flie higher with the Hobbie: soare against the sun with the Eagle: carry spices into thy nest with the Phenix: & doe nothing but worthie thy wit and thy learning. Is not a Diamond as soone cut as a pebble? a rofe as soone planted as a weed? a good booke as easilie pend, as a wanton Pamphlet? Then Green, giue thy selfe to write either of humanitie, and as Tullie did, set downe thy mind de officis, or els of Morall vertue, and so be a profitable in structer of manners: doe as the Philosophers did, seeke to bring youth to vertue, with setting downe Axiomes of good liuing, and doe not perfwade young Gentlemen to folly, by the acquainting themselues with thy idle workes. I tell theee, bookes are companions, and friends, and counsellors, and therefore ought to bee ciuill, honest, and discreet, leaft they corrupt with false doctrine, rude manners, and vicious liuing: Or els penne some thing of natural philosophie. Diue
down into the Aphorifmes of the Philosophers and see what nature hath done, and with thy pen paint that out to the world: let them see in the creatures the mightinesse of the Creator, so shalt thou reap report woorthy of memorie. Thus Greene haue I counsailed thee, and the seuen liberall Sciences lie before thee as subjectts whereon to write: Leave loue and her follies, let Venus bee a starre to gaze at, or els, if thou wilt needs Poetically haue her a Woman, accept her an infamous trumpet to wonder at: let fancie alone, and medle no more with affection: thou haft saied enough, and if Augustus had liued, as much as would haue deserued banishment. Now that I haue counsailed thee, tell me Greene, what thinkest thou of my aduertizement? howe art thou resolued? Doost thou not repent of thy time mispent, in penning such fruitlesse pamphlets? Rising vppe reuerently with my Cap in my hand, I made them this anfwere.

The Authours anfwere to Gower and Chawcer.

Earned & lawreat, whose censures are Authentical: I haue noted your words with such attention, that my minde is cleared of that doubt, wherewith it hath beeene long blemished: For now I perceiue Father Chawcer, that I followed too long your pleafant vaine,
in penning such Amourous workes, and that y fame that I fought after by such trauail, was nothing but smoke. I did with the Southerne wind bring in clouds to destroy my selfe, and like the Smith, make a toole to breede mine owne bane: and hunt after fame, when in deeds I found the ready path to infamy. My pamphlets haue past the press, and some haue giuen them praise, but the grauest fort, whose mouthes are the trumpets of true report, ha[ue] spoken hardlie of my labours: For which, if sorrow may make amends, I hope to acquite some part of my misle with penance, and in token (Father Gower) that what my tongue speaketh, my heart thinketh: I will begin from hence forth to hate all such follies, and to write of matters of some import: either Moral to discover the actiue course of vertue, how man should direct his life to the perfect felicity, or els to discourse as a Naturalist, of the perfection that Nature hath planted in her creatures, thereby to manifest the excellent glory of the maker: or some Politicall Axiomes, or Acanonicall preceptes that may both generally and particularly profite the Commonwealth. Hence foorth Father Gower, farewell the insight I had into loues secrets: let Venus rest in her sphere, I wil be no Astronomer to her influence: let affection die, and perish as a vapour that vaniseth in the aire, my yeares growe xii. 18
towards the grave, and I have had bouts enough with fancy: They which held Greene for a patron of love, and a second Ouid, shall now think him a Timon of such lineaments, and a Diogines that will barke at every amourous pen. Onely this (father Gower) I must end my Nunquam fera est, and for that I crave pardon: but for all these follies, that I may with the Niniuites, shew in sackcloth my harty repentaunce: looke as speedily as the pressé will serue for my mourning garment, a weede that I know is of so plaine a cut, that it will please the grauest eie, and the most precise eare. Thus father Gower, thy counsaille hath made me a convert & a penitent deépely sorrowfull for the follies of my penne, but promising here that no idle fancies shall grow any more from my conceit, hoping you will take my hand for a pawne of the faith of my promise, I rest yours in all humble duty. At this Gower wroong mee by the hand, and smilde, and Chawcer shakt his head and fumed: All three rising, and ready to depart, when the Meadow was all shadowed with a light, which suddenly vanisht: and there appeard a man in great royaltie, attyred gorgeous, in the habite of a King: carrying such grauitie in his countenance, as it strooke both feare and reuerence into my thoughts: At his presence Chawcer and Gower abasht, and both putting off their Bonnets, fell on
their knees: my felse in a great maze, did him
such duty as belongde to a Potentate: but still
mine eie gasde on the man, whose description take
thus.

The description of Salomon.

His stature tall, large, and hie,
Lim’d and featur’d beauteouslie,
Chest was broad, armes were strong.
Lockes of Amber passing long,
That hung and waued upon his necke,
Heauens beautie might they checke.
Visage faire and full of grace,
Mild and faire, for in one place,
Sate merchie meeklie in his eie:
And Justice in his lookes hard by.
His Roabes of Biffe, were crimsen hew,
Bordred round with twines of blew:
In Tyre no richer filke folde,
Ouer braided all with golde:
Costly fet with pretious stone,
Such before I neere saw none.
A maffie Crowne upon his head,
Chequerd through with Rubies red.
Orient Pearle and bright Topace,
Did burnish out each valiant place.
Thus this Prince that seemed sage,
Did goe in royall Equipage.
His gorgeous Potentate drew neere me, and
taking me by the hand, lifted me vp from
the place where I kneeled, / and said thus: My
son, they which respect their fame, are the children
of wisdome: & such as feare the danger of
report, shal be houlden vertuous. I know thy
thoughts by thy lookes, and thy face bewraies
thy resolution. The Pro et contra these haue had
about thy pamphlets, them I heard, though thou
haft not feene me, and I haue equally weighed
their censures: Chawcers opinion, hath his Maifters
Gower refelde, and made them by his counfaile
peremptory to leaue the follies of thy penne,
and all wanton Amours, to betake them to
Philofophy and higher labours: but to diuert
thee from that opinion my fonne am I come to
put knowledge in thy lippes, and to teach thee
wisedome. I am hee that craued it of the Lord,
and he gaue me it, and made me wifer then the
fons of men. Therefore harken to my wordes,
and let my sayings fink down into thy heart, fo
shalt thou be honored in the streets, & beé had
in estimation before the Magiftrate. Wifedome
my fonne is more worth then pretious ftones,
yea, all the things that thou canft deofire, are
not to be compared to it. Wifdome hath her
dwelling with knowledge, and prudent counfaile
is hir own: with her is the fear of the Lord and
the eschewing of il. As for pride and disdaine, and a mouth that speaketh foolish things, she utterly abhorreth them. She giues counsaile, & is a guide, and is ful of understanding and strength: through her kings raigne: through her, princes make iust laws: through hir, Lords beare rule, & Judges of the earth execute judgement: she is louing to those who loue her, and they that seeke hir early, shall find hir. Riches and honor are with her: yea, excellent goodnes and righteousness: her fruit is better then golde, & hir encrease more worth, than fine filuer. The Lord himself hath hir in possession, therefore hark to hir, for blessed is he man that watcheth at hir doors: who so findeth hir, findeth life, and shall obtaine fauour of the Lord, and who so offendeth against hir, hurteth his own soule: and who so hateth her, is the ouer of death. If then my Sonne, Wisedome be so pretious, howe haft thou misspent thy youth, that haft haunted after foolishnesse, and beaten thy braines about idle fancies, and yet art now resoluing to continue in vanitie: I tell thee, I haue / sought out to finde what is perfect vnder the Sunne: and I haue found nothing but wisdome without blemish. Learning hath many braunches, and teacheth her Schollers many strange things, and yet my Sonne when thou haft waded the depth of hir
knowledge, and fought into the secret of her bosome, thou shalt finde all thy labours to be vexation of minde and vanitie. Canst thou number and extract, as the cunning Arithmetician: or with Geometrie measure the ground, and leuell out the plaines by the excellencie of thine arte. Canst thou reach vnto the heauens with thy knowledge, and tell the course of the Starres, setting downe their aspects, oppositiues, times, and sextiles, and discourse of the influence of every Star? canst thou with musick please thine eare, and with the meladie of hir Cordes make thy heart merrie? Canst thou tell the secrets of Philosophie, and like a cunning naturalist, discouer the hidden aphorismes of arte, and set out the nature and operation of all things? wel my sonne, say thou canst write of all these things, yet when thou doest with a carefull insignt, enter into the consideracion, what the end of all is, thou shalt finde the studie of them to bee vter vexation of minde, and vanitie: and the fame that growes from such labours, to vanish awaye like smoake, or a vapour tossef with the winde: If then all be follie, sècke Wisedome, and shee will teach thee the feare of the Lord. Therefore my Sonne, follow my counsell from hencefoorth, as thou haft made a vowe to leaue effeminate fancies, and to proclaime thy selfe an open enemie to
loue: so abjure all other studies, seeing *Omnia sub caelo vanitas*, and onely giue thy selfe to Theologie: be a Deuine my Sonne, for her documents are seueritie, and her foode is the bread of life: hir principles came from Heauen, and hir wordes came from aboue, so shalt thou make amends for the follyes of thy youth, and as thou haft seduced youth by thy wanton Pamphlets: so shalt thou instruct them by thy godlie labours. Diuinitie, whie it is a studie that farre surpasseth all the seuen liberall sciences, and the leaft sparke that it doth lighten is more bright then all their fading glories: it comprehendeth / the lawe of the Lorde: and by it shalt thou knowe what the depth of his will is. Theologie is mother of all knowledge, for from it commeth health of the soule, and through it thou shalt win men vnto heauen. Then my Sonne, leaue all other vaine studies, and applye thy selfe to feede vpon that heauenly Manna, whose taste shall comforte thy heart, and drinke of those waters, which shall spring in thee a well of life, and so shalt thou recouer thy fame that thou haft loft, and be accompted of amongst the Elders of the Cittie. Couet not to blinde thy selfe with the illusions that other artes present vnto thee: for so shalt thou haue the portion of the foole, and the end of thy labours shall be vanitie: for
all knowledge except it, is mere follie: and there
is no wisdome, but the knowledge of the law of
the Lord.
Therefore be not wise in thine owne conceit,
for he that will not heere instruction, shall
feele the smart of the rodde. Deuinitie I tell
thee, is the true wisdome, and vpon hir right
hand is long life, and vpon hir left hand is
riches and honour: her wayes are pleafant,
and her pathes are peaceable: she is a tree of
life to them that lay hould vpon her, and blessed
are they that keepe her faft. The first point
of wisdome, is, that thou be willing to obtaine
wisdome, and when thou haft got her, shee will
make thee a gratious head, and garnishe thy
temples with a Crowne of glorie: if then my
Sonne, all knowledge, all sciences, all artes, all
learning except Theologie, be meere foolifhnesse
and vanitie: leaue the quiddities of Lodgick, and
aphorismes of Philosophie: and applye thy wits
only to diuinitie. Hould not these precepts
light, that I haue giuen thee, nor disdayne not my
counfaile, for I that speake to thee am Salomon.
And this he spake with such a maiestie, that
the terrour of his countenance afrighted me, and
I started and awoake, and found my felfe in a
dreame: yet Gentlemen, when I entered into the
consideration of the vision, and called to minde
not onely the counsaile of Gower, but the per-
swasions of Salomon: a sodaine feare tainted euery
limme, and I felt a horror in my conscience, for
the follyes of my Penne: wherevpon, as in my
dreame so awoke, I resolved peremptorilie to
leaue all thoughts of loue, and to applye my wits
as neere as I could, to seeke after wisdome so
highly commended by Salomon: but howsoever
the direction of my studies shall be limited
me, as you had the blossomes of my
wanton fancies, so you shall haue
the fruietes of my better
laboures.


Imprinted at London for Thomas
Newman, and are to be sould at his shop
in Fleetestreete, in Saint Dunftons
Churchyard.
NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS.
I. Notes and Illustrations.

See general explanatory remarks prefixed to Notes and Illustrations in Vol. II., pp. 301-2.

ORPHARION.

Page 5, l. 1, 'Robert Carey'—see Index of Names, s.n.: l. 5, 'Hippocrates'—sic: l. 7, 'Bayard'—see Glossarial-Index s.v., freq.: l. 11, 'to' = too, ut freq.: l. 16, 'prefer' = offer or bear in: l. 19, 'plausible' = pleasing or praiseful.

7, l. 10, 'drive' = drove: ib., 'line' = lien or lain: l. 16, 'for' = against.

9, l. 6, 'affects' = affections: l. 12, 'Tarantals = tarantula.

10, l. 4, 'Semiramus' = Semiramis: l. 18, 'Venus had only a Temple' = Venus alone had a temple, was the only one worshipped.

11, l. 23, 'fondnesse' = foolishness.

12, l. 6, 'passing' = overpassing, and thence as 'very.'

14, l. 1, 'passions' = lamentings, ut freq.
NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

Page 15, l. 3, 'had she'—perhaps error for 'hath she' or 'she hath': l. 8, 'inferred' = brought in, ut freq.: l. 21, 'Rosalger'—I find only 'algarot' or butter of antimony (terchloride of antimony or caustic) mingled with water so as to make a white powder. This was possibly mingled with conserve of roses or with roses so as to act both as a bait and a poison to mice.

" 16, l. 4, 'incarnative' = a medicine to make (or heal) flesh: l. 15, 'wheele . . . for'—can only reduce to sense by reading 'wheele, (where . . . plaste), then for,' etc.

" 17, l. 5, 'are'—either Greene's knowledge was defective, or he uses the word in an unusual sense, apparently = admixture: l. 10, 'but flattering' = but flattering [favour (only)]: l. 12, 'new fangle' = new fangle[d], i.e. new toyed or new trifled, or fond of new toys or new trifles.

" 18, l. 2, 'roundly' = plainly, unceremoniously, i.e. saying what he had to say without angles: l. 13, 'mansion'—note spelling, and cf. p. 25, l. 20, 'mansion': l. 16, 'crue'—see Glossarial-Index s.v., for prior examples, freq.: l. 20, 'Take me not generally'—This contrary to his meaning destroys his previous sayings. Greene cannot have used 'generally' as = universally and without exception, for this is not English. Hence the passage seems—as too often in Orpharion—corrupt. Query—is 'not' a misprint
for 'now'? thus implying, 'I speak generally but there may be exceptions.' Of course it is just possible he may have meant—
'Take me not generally [but universally]'; but the old Shepherd's speeches do not seem to warrant such extravagance of language: l. 28, 'galupin' = galaxy or Milky way [i.e. gal = γαλα, milk].

Page 19, l. 7, 'capaple'—note spelling: l. 9, 'parle' = talk: l. 24, 'None comes . . . nor returne'—even Batman, a Professor of Divinity, has plural noun and verbs singular.

" 21, l. 21, 'Phæbus' = Phoebe: l. 16, 'slauery' —misprinted 'sauery.'

" 22, l. 12, 'Feere' = companion, mate: l. 21, 'forepointed' = foreappointed: l. 22, 'arrival consequence'—Query [a] consequence? or possibly error for 'consequent on.'

" 23, l. 1, 'censures' = judges, ut freq.: l. 8, 'Beralles' = Berils or beryls: l. 9, 'oftentimes,' etc.—either Greene mentally supplied after 'faces' [are stained] from 'staines,' l. 8, or 'with' should be 'have'—an unlikely error: l. 19, 'Ramera' = remora: l. 27, 'inferre' = bring in.

" 24, l. 1, 'apples of Tantalus'—by the use of 'ashes' Greene seems to have confused in his memory the classic fable and notices of the Dead Sea fruit: l. 7, 'halfe'—misprinted 'halpe': l. 10, 'with the only breath'—an excellent example that such collocations were equivalent to our 'only with the
NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

breath,' etc.: l. 16, 'metaphisical[?]' = beyond nature, as before.

Page 25, l. 1, 'experience' = trial, but not obsolete:
  l. 13, 'frowes'—from Dutch = women: l. 25, 'respecting'—we should say 'in respect of':
  l. 27, 'remorse' = pity—an excellent example: l. 28, 'shrikes' = shrieks.

26, l. 13, 'dry blow' = a hard or severe blow ('blow' being used of course metaphorically).

27, l. 4, 'Marguerites' = pearls: l. 16, 'roialtie'—misprinted 'roilaie': l. 18, 'set down his staff' = made up his mind, because when stopping, the wayfarer sets down his staff.

28, l. 5, 'Wast'—see Glossarial-Index s.v.:
  l. 16, 'Acestes'—misprinted 'Alcestes':
  l. 19, 'Armour' = arms (heraldically).

29, l. 1, 'by whom'—query an error for 'but whom': l. 10, 'put thy,' etc.—still a vulgar expression: l. 17, 'lesse.'

30, l. 2, 'sealed:'—this punctuation is very frequent in Greene, but with us it would be 'sealed, . . . mind': l. 16, 'stay' = prop or support, and therefore (oddly) used as estate or fortune.

31, l. 18, 'guesie' = queasy, squeamish: l. 19, 'wrest' = twist or screwing: ib., 'enduring' = continuing: l. 22, 'Goord Nutte'—the seeds of some gourds or of plants then reckoned amongst gourds, were much larger than those of the common gourd, and even had nutty shells. But no such effect of gourd seeds or nuts is mentioned
in Park: l. 25, 'contemplature' = contemplativeness.

Page 32, l. 11, 'amateth' = daunteth, dismayeth:
l. 12, 'Zerxes'—misprint for 'Zeuxses':
l. 25, 'start vp' = -ed.

33, l. 1, 'a complexion'—by a singular mis-
placing of type this is in the original
misprinted unintelligibly 'exa complion' =
Melancholy was one of the four 'complex-
ions': l. 11, 'curiositie' = over-carefulness,
niceness: l. 15, 'conditions'—probably
included both position by fortune and con-
dition of constitution: l. 19, 'penitrature'
—clearly an error, but whether for a new
coinage of 'penitenture' or 'portraiture'
cannot say: l. 23, 'Caratides'—see separate
lists, as before: l. 24, 'leaf'—misprinted
'least' in original.

34, l. 14, 'Volgo'—same mistake has occurred
before—a mere fancy name here.

35, l. 25, 'Physiognomer' = physiognomist, i.e.
face-reader.

36, l. 3, 'crepidum'—the usual misreading for
'crepidam': l. 8, 'extoll' = lift up high:
l. 15, 'Prince' = princess: l. 26, 'fonde' =
foolish.

37, l. 11, 'Hobby' = a small kind of hawking hawk,
a sparrow-hawk appointed to a young man
below a squire: l. 26, 'try' = prove, ut
freq.: l. 28, 'childing' = chilling?

38, l. 14, 'pretended' = intended, i.e. intended
beforehand: l. 18, 'standish' = inkstand,
NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

e etc., ut freq.: l. 25, 'Phalanga' = phalangium, a name common in Pliny (B. xxix. c. 4) to various venomous spiders.

Page 39, l. 3, 'come'—sic—should apparently be 'come[s]': l. 10, 'I haue aspyred too hie . . . I am borne.' We should now write '[that] I have aspyred . . . [because] I am borne,' but Greene and his contemporaries frequently omitted 'that,' carelessly making another 'that' subaudite do duty in the second clause instead of using 'because': l. 12, 'race' = raze, ut freq.

41, l. 8, 'Labia'—sic—probable misprint for Libia or Libya, in which Greene's uncertain geography may have placed the Egyptian labyrinth. Africa generally was called Libya by the Greeks: l. 19, 'paltring' = paltry.

42, l. 1, 'ownce' = ounce.

44, l. 6, 'arming sword' = a two-handed sword ('Nomenclator,' p. 275, referred to by Halliwell-Phillipps s.v.): l. 14, 'come'—query misprint for 'came'?

45, l. 10, 'vouiage' = journey or passage.

46, l. 3, 'Conducts' = conductors, leaders: l. 18, 'Cornet' = a company of horse, because they bore a 'cornet.' Hence the officer answering to the ensign of an infantry company is still in the cavalry called a 'cornet.'

47, l. 10, 'beside' = beyond: l. 24, 'Ragusa'—Greene was not at all careful as to his
NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

geography: l. 27, 'Bariers' = fighting within prescribed bounds or lists.

Page 49, l. 5, 'prest' = ready: l. 24, 'acception' = exception—note spelling.

50, l. 21, 'abashed' = '[were] abashed': or qy. used in a causative sense? or as 'abashed themselves'? Cf. p. 57, l. 28, for similar phrasing—choller [being] past: l. 22, 'in-grate' = ungrateful.

51, l. 8, 'grudged' = felt a grudge, as still used: l. 12, 'off' = off, as in l. 17 'off' = of: l. 13, 'doome' = judgment: l. 14, 'over-thwarts' = overthrows, or thwart, or contradictions, or crosses.

52, l. 5, 'there'—error for 'the' or 'then the.'

53, l. 13, 'martiall [lawe],' or possibly 'martiall-ists'.

54, l. 8, 'harriers' = spoilers—misprinted 'harriers': l. 16, 'mayne battaile' = the middle or chief of the three divisions into which an Elizabethan army was divided, the others being the van and the rear: l. 19, 'were'—misprinted 'were': l. 21, 'legard' = leigered or leagured. Cf. p. 53, l. 14.

55, l. 15, 'Sentonell' = sentinel—note spelling.

56, l. 12, 'treaties' = entreaties?

57, l. 3, 'raced' = razed, ut freq.: l. 7, 'eyther'—sentence unfinished, or 'eyther' superfluous and meant to be erased, or qy. error for 'even'? : l. 12, 'from'—misprinted 'for'; or qy. = against?: l. 20, 'pawne' = security.
Page 58, l. 6, 'legars' = besiegers: *ibid.*, 'admiration' = wonder: l. 9, 'reueleed' = revealed: l. 24, 'Courte of garde' = the guard. It is corruptly used by Dekker ('Gull's H. B.' c. 8) as guard. Not improbably the *Corps de garde* and the *Cour de Garde* became in English ears one and the same, but properly it is not the 'guard,' the persons composing the guard, but the court or place of guard.

" 59, l. 3, 'my Father's court'—note sudden change from the indirect or historical to the direct.

" 60, l. 23, 'Lidia'—misprinted 'Liuia': l. 27, 'traine' = plot that leads up to a stratagem.

" 61, l. 7, 'pined' = starving. Cf. p. 62, l. 7; or qy. = pinned = unpinning?: l. 18, 'events' = issues: l. 26, 'tyred' = hawking term (Fr. tiröner or tiver) = to pounce and feed upon, as do birds of prey.

" 62, l. 9, 'bruited' = made known, spread abroad: l. 10, 'last date' = date, and more especially 'last date,' is still commonly used for 'end,' as "ages of endless date": l. 13, 'fondly' = foolishly, ut freq.: l. 17, 'touch' = touchstone or trial, or query = [the time of] touch or contact [between life and death, or between this life and a future existence]?

" 63, l. 24, 'Dietie' = deity—provincial pronunciation still.

" 65, l. 1, 'Dolphin' = not the many-coloured fish
NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS. 293

Dolphin; but the Delphinus, a genus of cetaceous mammals including the porpoise. Hence the epithet "crooked back." It was on such an animal's back that Arion was fabled to have escaped. See p. 68, l. 26.

Page 66, l. 7, 'censures' = judges, or decides. Cf. p. 68, l. 18, ut freg.: l. 13, 'metaphysicall' = beyond physical, as before.

" 67, l. 3, 'stigmaticall'—then used for a person 'branded' for some crime. Hence - deformed, or of evil constitution: l. 25, 'copesmates' = companions.

" 68, l. 4, 'Esseni' = Essenes—whose general practice was that of celibacy: l. 16, 'Silex' = flint? or qy. press error for Silenite? See Batman upon Barth. xvi. 92. The Latin dictionaries of the date Anglicise 'silex' by marble as well as flint, and Holyoke's Rider's English-Latin gives under flint—"A flint-stone of a marvellous nature, being steeped in water it burneth, and sprinkled with oyle it is quenched. [Lat.] Thracras vel Thracius lapis—a flint-stone or marchasite, out of the which fire is stricken—Chalix pyrites, igniarius lapis, marchasita, lapis cerarius."

" 69, l. 10, 'straightly' = straitly.

" 70, l. 1, 'Phebe' = moon: l. 7, 'flourisht upon' = well displayed upon—the result being indicated by the act. 'Over-dash' is its synonym: l. 18, 'start' = started, ut freg.:
l. 23, 'messe'—from Shakespeare and others we learn that in Elizabeth's time a 'messe' meant four, that being the number that at dinner made up a 'messe' of persons associated in some way in their eating: l. 26, 'sewed'—either a misprint for 'servued,' as suggested by Greene's style and the occurrence just below this of 'servitor,' or a misprint or variant for 'sewe[r]ed,' a word of the same sense as 'servued,' but more definite in meaning. The Prince was their 'sewer.'

Page 71, l. 8, 'measure'—Halliwell-Phillipps and Wright explain this as "a slow and solemn dance," but no authority is given for the necessarily "slow and solemn," and for other reasons it may be doubted. Cf. p. 73, l. 9 : l. 28, 'out'—the phrase requires 'out [like]' or '[as].'

74, l. 16, 'other[s]'—perhaps the 's' was not required, as 'other' was then used as a plural.

75, l. 17, 'for'—query misprint for 'from'? or = an account of? Cf. p. 80, l. 8.

76, l. 1, 'pensick' = sick-with-the-pen, or poetically; or query a variant of 'pensive'? Ash and Coles have pensiculation (and Latin pensiculator) = a thoughtful consideration. Or perhaps Greene used the word in our Eastern counties' sense of pens——to be fretful, complaining; or its contrast with 'passionate' suggests that
it is, as Laertes says of Hamlet's love for Ophelia—"a toy in blood . . . The sup-
ppliance of a minute."

Page 77, l. 17, 'dark'—misprinted 'dart': ibid., 'amphibological' = an aphorism of ambi-
guous or doubtful meaning—from Græco-
Latin amphibologia, etc.: l. 27, 'ambigues' = ambiguities — formed from the Latin
substantive ambiguum, instead of, as ours,
from the variant ambiguitas.

" 78, l. 22, 'esteemst' = a press error for 'esteemst':
l. 25, 'sparseled' = dispersed.

" 79, l. 12, 'tried' = proved: l. 13, 'Esclapius her husband'—queer mythology: l. 15,
'Pelopidus'—read Pelopidas, and so p. 83,
ll. 3, 14, etc. Cf. p. 70, l. 4; also note the
scene is Corinth, and the other names
Grecian: l. 17, 'nusle vp' = nestle up, wrap
up in one's arms: l. 22, 'Mobae' = press
error doubtless for Niobe or Niobæ.

" 80, l. 1, 'windfalls' = fallen by the winds, as
blown-down fruit.

" 81, l. 5, 'pratle' = converse, ut freq.: l. 9, 'I'
= ay.

" 82, l. 16, 'requite'—misprinted 'request' in the
original.

" 83, l. 4, 'way: when'—there is clearly an
omission between these words of some such
words as 'then the Dutches replied.' The
compositor's eye probably wandered from
'then' to 'when': l. 10, 'Philomenes to' =
Philomenes, [let us] to.
NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

Page 86, l. 9, 'disgraced' = degraded: l. 14, 'handy-thrift' = handicraft; but 'thrift' as derived from 'thrive' was not always used then in our sense of sparingness, but as = thriving, prosperity, etc.

,, 88, l. 7, 'feature'—see Glossarial-Index, s.v., freq.

,, 90, l. 22, 'Gentiles' = Gentles; but perhaps Greene intended an equivocque.

,, 91, l. 14, 'baco' = press error for Baccho—the phrase is Terence's.

,, 93, l. 14, 'fallacions' = fallacies: l. 18, 'or'—misprinted 'and' in original.

GREENS GROATS-WORTH OF WIT.

Title-page, l. 8, 'before' in the original is misprinted 'before before'; and so, l. 14, 'long' is 'long long.' The second motto is misprinted 'Vir essit' for 'Virescit.' 'Virescit vulner e virtus' is the original reading, from Aul. Gell., 'Noctes Atticæ,' xviii. 11. 4,—'veritas' was doubtless intended as a (modern) variant or improvement. Doubtless to have left these literatim would have brought the blundering of the old printers before the eye; but we owe too much to Thomas Creede so to disgrace him.

Page 99, l. 15, 'W. W.'—does not appear in the title-page. In the Stationers' Register (iii. 72—Arber) we have this entry:—
NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

20 Octobris 1596.

Thomas Creede.  Entred for Richard Oliffe Copie
Richard Olif.  GREENES groates [worth] of witt printed
             by John Danter.  And Thomas Creede
             from tyme to tyme to print this book
             for Richard Oliff . . . . . vj^a.

also—agreeably to our Note (p. 96)—

22 Die Septembris [1592]

William Entred for his copie, vnder master Watkins
Wrighte hande / vppon the perill of Henrye Chettle /
a book intituled / GREENES Groatsworth of
wyt bought with a million of Repentance . . . vj^a.

whence ' W. W.' is = William Wrighte.

Page 101, l. 4, 'deeplyer'—example of a comparative
of adverb in -ly, made with -er: l. 17,
'former bookes' = the 'Coney' tractates:

l. 28, 'me will'—example of omission of
pronoun [it] where we should deem it
necessary. The writer considered the
former 'this' to be sufficiently understood
here.

" 103, l. 7, 'Antiquary'—an intentionally vague
reference: l. 10, 'Gentleman'—misprinted
'gentlemen.'

" 104, l. 3, 'Nouerint'—see Glossarial-Index, s.v.:

l. 10, 'bolt' = reprouing saying—a thing
launched at one, and that hurts, as in a
thunderbolt: l. 15, 'curiously' = carefully,
as before—excellent example.

" 105, l. 12, 'witlesse' = foolish — misprinted
'intreated witlesse':

" 106, l. 11, 'wooning' = wonning, house or home.

" 107, l. 12, 'telling' = counting—common enough
still, yet needing to be noted, as commen-
tators on Milton unhappily prove: l. 18, 'sinloke'—apparently an unintelligible misprint.

Page 108, l. 10, 'assurance' = security (as still in use): l. 26, 'foole-holy' = over-holy; but see context.

109, l. 10, 'it now'—query 'it [not] now, it was'?

110, l. 14, 'enterd' = interred.

111, l. 3, 'Adamants' = loadstones: l. 4, 'witchcrafts'—misprinted 'vitchcrafts,' as 'vith' for 'with' in p. 10, l. 25.

112, l. 16, 'clawde' = flattered, ut freg.

113, l. 3, 'scituate'—an instance of the absorption of the -ed, which is perpetuated to this day in house advertisements: l. 15, 'A B C'—pronounce as metre directs, 'Absey,' as now: l. 19, 'wild' = will'd. So p. 148, l. 1.

114, l. 16, 'prentise for three lines'—because a 'prenticeship is usually for seven years: l. 18, 'Avarice his deceased father'—a parallel phrase to Shakespeare's "whose mother was her painting" (Cymb. III. iv. 52): l. 21, 'wainscot proof'—see Glossarial-Index s.v.

115, l. 15, 'and' = an; and so p. 118, l. 1: l. 17, 'till death,' etc.—the words used in the (then) marriage service of Church of England; now it is 'till death us do part.'

116, l. 13, 'shamefast'—held back by shame; probably the original of our present
'shamefaced,' and at least a variant: l. 26 'meaning' = intention.

Page 117, l. 12, 'amber coloured darts' = her hair.

118, l. 6, 'apointed' = set: l. 10, 'Beuer felt = hat. Our present tall hats, before 'silk was used for them, were made of beaver' fur and vulgarly called 'Beavers': l. 12 'cranke' — a second instance of this odd use of 'cranke' for (apparently) 'chat and agreeable' — a use hitherto unknown and not yet found (it is believed) in any other author. See also p. 137, l. 27: l. 14 'play on' — 'hornepipe' being a tune and dance, the use of 'on' is noticeable: l. 27 'woodcock pie' — introduced by Greene because 'woodcock' was a known name for a particular kind of 'fowl.' Cf. p. 128, l. 7.

119, l. 3, 'abilitie' — in a commercial sense, able to spend, etc.: l. 17, 'for,' etc. Punctuat 'word. For . . . own said,' etc.

120, l. 4, 'Gray' = badger: l. 10, 'Friday face = Fast-day face: l. 16, 'strout' = strut l. 24, 'habitation.' Punctuate 'habitation,' but Greene's punctuation is arbitrary, an not according to our grammar, etc., especially in the ending and commencement of a sentence.

121, l. 2, 'trained' = followed the train of — still in use: l. 7, 'wearied' = press error for 'worried.'

122, l. 5, 'others' — a second example of wha
we should use ‘the others.’ See p. 119, l. 21: l. 23, ‘affect’ = affection.

Page 124, l. 24, ‘trickly attired’ = properly and well attired for the trick—i.e. attired like the bride. Cf. p. 125, l. 3, where Marian is Mother Gunby’s daughter.

126, l. 14, ‘to marrie Marian’—usual haste of Greene shown here: for in p. 122, l. 7, he had said ‘married they [the farmer’s son and the Squire’s daughter] were,’ etc.

128, l. 26, ‘Roberto’—by this name, by the term ‘Poet’ (l. 18), by the incidents pp. 131, 134, 135 (and note on p. 137, 4—9), and by “irreligiously forsaken thy wife” which last there was no need otherwise of adding, it is clear that ‘Roberto’ represented Robert Greene: and so tragically throughout.

129, l. 15, ‘Jacke Drums entertainment’—properly a ‘beating,’ but used for any uncivil or rude entertainment that drove one out of doors: l. 14, ‘them that was’—an excellent illustration of that followed by a singular though it refer to a plural antecedent: l. 22, ‘in’—Dyce’s correction to ‘to’ [but qy. too?] accepted, but not ‘mean’ for ‘meant’: l. 27, ‘shoes’ = shows.

130, l. 7, ‘tramels’ = nets: l. 18, Dyce misprints ‘brings’ and ‘hastes.’

131, l. 11, ‘censured’ = judged, ut freq.: l. 26, ‘Delphingus,’ etc.—on this and allusions, see annotated Life in Vol. I.
Page 132, l. 6, 'Moral of mans wit,' 'Dialogue of Diues,' etc.—see ibid.: l. 27, 'cranker' = chatter, merrier. Cf. note on p. 118, l. 12.

133, l. 6, 'casseered' = cashiered: l. 8, 'duke Humfrey's Squires'—when a dinnerless man walked in St. Paul's he was said to dine with Duke Humphrey, whose tomb was there—freq.: l. 9, 'drawn out with his heeles'—one of several odd uses of the preposition 'with.' It means, of course through the agency of his heels': l. 12, 'kindness'—ironical: l. 24, 'remorse' = pity, ut freq.

134, l. 4, 'Arch plai-making' = maker of plays: l. 13, 'earnest' = payment in part beforehand: l. 20, 'lightly' = commonly: l. 22, 'casts' = sleights: l. 24, 'nips,' etc.—see Coney-books, freq., and Glossarial-Index for all these technical terms.

135, l. 7, 'scores' = credit: l. 13, 'Brothell'—oddly used for a 'prostitute'—her and his name was Ball, she being the mother of 'Infortunatus Greene': ib., 'trust' = trussed: l. 28, 'other'—one example among others of 'other' being used as a plural.

136, l. 17, 'warneth men by dreams.' Cf. St Matthew ii. 12: l. 26, 'chalke' = chalked up score or credit.

137, l. 4, 'sell,' etc.—here Greene refers to this and his other late booklets; and ll. 7—9
etc., again show that 'Roberto' was (at least in many things) a portrait of Robert Greene himself: l. 19—the scansion is 'To length/en my life,' the 'en' (like 'er') being held sometimes as a non- or very short syllable. Hence Dyce's (silent) correction 'T'outlengthen' is not needed: at most 'en' should have been struck out.

Page 138, l. 15, 'then deplore'—Dyce makes the correction 'he deplor'd'; but surely such is not permissible to any Editor. Spenser over and over betrays the same neglect, and critically it is well to know of other examples. Sense and rhyme (see ll. 2 and 5 of this stanza) are restored by reading 'deplor[d]e.'

"139, l. 3, 'Telegones' = Telegonus, son of Ulysses by Circe, unknowingly killed his father.

"142, l. 1, 'the famous gracer of Tragedians' = Marlowe; but see annotated Life in Vol. I.

"143, l. 9, 'young Juvenal' = Nash; but ibid.: l. 21, 'thou no lesse deserving,' etc. = Peele; but ibid.

"144, l. 1, 'burres' = the rough prickly coverings of the seeds of the burdock: sometimes also used of those of the chestnut: l. 8, 'upstart crow' = Shakespeare; but see annotated Life in Vol. I.: l. 24, 'two more'—ibid.

"145, l. 11, 'maketh'—misprint 'making' in original; but query expunge the 'and'? This would render 'making' correct.
NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

Page 146, l. 13, 'prying' = spying and something more—still used: l. 27, 'husband' = husbandman.

" 147, l. 2, 'wide'—Dyce records quarto as 'wilde, but it is not so in our exemplar, and of course rhyme proves 'wide,' is correct. l. 4, 'pleasure'—misprinted 'pleasurely'—qy. pleasaunce?: l. 19, 'into' = unto (Dyce).

THE REPENTANCE OF ROBERT GREENE

Page 156, last l., 'C. B.' = Cuthbert Burbie of title-page.

" 157, l. 8, 'nurture' = education or training.

" 158, l. 15, 'objected' = cast before in its primary etymological sense: l. 26, 'to loose'—an instance of the use of 'to,' where we should omit it: id., 'inch'—misspelt 'inch' in the original.

" 159, l. 26, 'copesmates' = companions, ut freq.

" 162, l. 7, 'meere' = wholly or only: l. 14, 'blas peming' = blasp[h]eming.

" 164, l. 14, 'shelles' = money (cant term): l. 25 'attached' = legally arrested.


" 167, l. 24, 'brauery' = defiance.

" 172, l. 21, 'Malcontent'—query a character in a play?

" 173, l. 6, 'profitable'—query '[not] profitable
or ['[un]profitable'?: l. 14, 'let' = hindrance, stop: l. 24, 'copesmates.' See p. 159, l. 26; p. 176, l. 12, et freq. Page 177, l. 25, 'score' = in debt: l. 27, 'penning of plaiies,' etc.—see annotated Life in Vol. I. on this.

178, l. 17, 'indifferently' = impartially.

182, l. 18, 'earnest pennie' = advance payment. See Glossarial-Index s.v.

185, l. 23, 'a Letter'—on this see annotated Life, Vol. I., new corrective notes by Professor Storojenko sent to the Editor.

187, l. 21, 'worthily' = deservedly, righteously.

193, l. 2, 'Nicholas Sanders'—see Index of Names, s.n.: l. 12, 'Manie'—four are known.

194, l. 3, 'inseperate' = inseparable.

197, l. 3, 'Cobler of Canterbury'—appeared in 1590 and 1608, and under a new title in 1630, 'The Tincker of Turvey . . . . '

198, l. 2, 'thus'—misprinted 'this.'

201, l. 15, read 'place[s].'

202, l. 6,—read '[not] in painting': l. 15, 'painefull' = painstaking: l. 18, 'Aconiton' = poison (generically): l. 24, 'orient'—see Glossarial-Index for other examples, s.v.

203, l. 2, 'contriues'—see Glossarial-Index s.v.: l. 13, 'driue' = drove or drave.

205, l. 14, 'coniecture' = throwing together.

206, l. 2, 'a Malo in penis'—read 'a Malo in pejus': l. 24, 'to the[e]' ; and so l. 22.

207, l. 20, 'handfast' = hand-clasp.
NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS.


210, l. 18, 'breech' = breeches: l. 20, 'Pricked ... shoone' = pointed shoes: l. 21, 'doone' = do.

211, l. 3, 'start' = ed, ut freq.: l. 15, 'mere'—misprinted 'more': l. 17, 'fond' foolish, ut freq.

213, l. 9, 'touch' = touchstone.

215, l. 6, 'Morosie' = morose people.

217, l. 9, 'count'—query 'course'? : l. 12, 'Aconomical' = economical: l. 26, 'Ethnik' = heathen.

219, l. 1, 'implasters' = plasters (laid on): l. 21, 'while' = until, ut freq.

220, l. 18, 'Bauins' = bundles of (tarred) sticks = flambeaux. See Glossarial-Index s.v.

225, l. 1, 'Carsey' = Kersey: l. 4, 'guards' = facings: l. 5, 'stock' = stocking, as before: l. 7, 'Lockeram' = coarse linen: l. 8, 'Couentrie blew' = a once famous frieze.

226, l. 2, 'Mockado'—see Glossarial-Index s.v.: ib., 'Partlet' = ruff, and see ibid.: l. 24, 'harding aporne' = apron, but see ibid.

227, l. 23, 'dizond' = adorned, bedizened: l. 24, 'paste' = artificial jewel?

228, l. 2, 'Creuell Points' = wool-work.

229, l. 13, 'shifts' = tricks, expedients.

232, l. 8, 'Dormitarie' = sleeping opiate: l. 21, 'watching Candle' = night candle?: l. 25, 'gogs noones' = God's wounds (minced oath).
NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

Page 235, l. 3, 'nunquam sera est' = Coney books.

" 236, l. 25, 'instances.' Cf. Shakespeare, "give such instances of loss."

" 241, l. 6, 'tramels' = nets, as before.

" 249, l. 14, 'Chro diagnostes'—error for diagnostes (διαγνωστής) = the discerner or accurate inquirer into. The 'Chro' may be χρω of χρως, body or flesh, and the whole word Chro-diagnostes = body or flesh-discerner, in agreement with context. Or 'Chro' may be an error for Chr[i]o, 'I anoint,' and the phrase be inaccurately meant for 'the anointed discerner.' The MS. correction was meant to make it Caudagnostes = burning discerner; but a mere conjectural emendation: l. 21, 'launch' = lance (Henry IV., I. i. 56) and Hamlet IV. v. 162.

" 250, l. 14, 'hands thirst' must be a misprint for 'hands thrift,' in apposition-contrast or poise with 'harts thirst.' We know that 'thrist' was a Greene-used form of 'thirst,' but neither sense nor this poising of the clauses allows of the use of both forms in one short sentence.

" 253, l. 16, 'Sinister'—see separate lists, s.v.

" 257, l. 20, 'race' = raze.

" 262,—this French couplet in the original is made "pie" of thus:—

"Le ville que parle, le femme qui S'esconte
L'ane se gaigne, l'aulie, S'effonte."

= (accurately as on p. 262) "The town
that parleys, the woman that deliberates,
the one surrenders (is gained), the other
allows herself to be ——” : l. 11, ‘in-
duced’ = led.

Page 266, l. 25, ‘Landes-ladie’—note spelling.

270, l. 8, ‘circumstance’ = condition. Cf.
	Hamlet III. iii. 83.


275, l. 16, ‘Bisse’ = fine silk.

II. Proverbs, Proverbial Sayings, Phrases,
ETC.

Page 5, l. 10, ‘will is aboue skill.’

7, l. 10, ‘it hath line this twelve months in the
suds.’

9, l. 13, ‘pierced with Achilles launce must be
healed by his speare.’

10, l. 25, ‘buy smoake with many perrills and
daungers.’

15, l. 26, ‘repentance oft cometh too late.’

17, l. 10, ‘reape many kisses and little loue’:
	l. 13, ‘she makes him swell in the browes’ =
cornutes : l. 23, ‘looke before thou leape’ :
	l. 24, ‘see what chaffer she provides for her
chapmen.’

18, l. 19, ‘Wives be they neuer so watcht they
will’ : l. 20, ‘Maides be they neuer so bash-
full they wish’ : l. 21, ‘widowes bee they
neuer so coy, they would.’

21, l. 16, ‘as if his service should be slauery.’

22, l. 2, ‘But faire and constant hardly may
agree.’
Page 23, l. 18, 'we light in the ditch.'

" 24, l. 19, 'thought it was best to pocket vp whatsoever a Ghost out of hell did tattle.'

" 29, l. 10, 'thou mayst put thy winnings in thine eye.'

" 31, l. 2, 'Tush, Loue is above Lord or law, friend or faith': l. 14, 'she is but a woman, and therefore to be wonne.'

" 33, l. 12, 'the best fruite hath the brauest blossomes': 'the most precious stone, is chosen by the most glistering hue' and 'the best conditions by the sweetest countenance': l. 16, 'where beauty reigneth, there vertue remaineth; and under a faire face resteth a faithfull hart': l. 21, 'the hottest thunders are not euer quenched with raine, nor the deepest greifes euer discoured by teares.'

" 34, l. 9, 'take time by the forehead': l. 11, 'tooke hart at grace': l. 16, 'to represse the fier is to encrease the flame,' etc.: l. 19, 'wounds fed of with delayes fester,' etc.: l. 20, 'fancy long held in the grasse,' etc.

" 35, l. 23, 'hath too much familiarietie bredde contempt?'

" 36, l. 7, 'set a Begger on horsebacke, and they say he will neuer light'—an explanation of one sense at least in which 'riding to the devil' was taken: l. 8, 'extoll one of base stock,' etc.

" 37, l. 21, 'But by the sweete, how should wee know the sower: the white seemeth most siluer lined,' etc.
Page 38, l. 16, 'Acestes was faine to aime his course by a new compasse.'

"39, l. 14, 'I quench fire with Flaxe.'

"53, l. 28, 'met halfe at aduantage,' etc.

"57, l. 10, 'brought the Beare to the stake.'

"58, l. 12, 'he neuer plaid in iest.'

"59, l. 11, 'caught the Lyon in y' snare': l. 14, 'he should fal to his fortunes.'

"60, l. 21, 'well out of the way.'

"64, l. 5, 'remaine in the fogge'—the context explains 'all smeared in the smoke.'

"66, l. 20, 'the richest gold hath the rarest colour,' etc., etc.

"67, l. 19, 'he possesseth at command.'

"70, l. 28, 'was on his halfe-penny'—his desires on something different to or beyond the rest.

"71, l. 23, 'tread his taske.'

"72, l. 4, 'Kings wordes may not offend.'

"75, l. 5, 'like the pace of a Crab, backwarde': l. 6, 'Hast thou in thy cradle been continent,' etc., etc.

"76, l. 15, 'Louers oaths are like fetters made of glasse.'

"78, l. 8, 'a woman, & therfore to be wooed, & so to be won': l. 11, 'an ounce of give me is worth a pound of heare me': l. 17, 'she that is faithless to one will be constant to none.'

"80, l. 1, 'Maids must be married, least they be marred': l. 2, 'if they be coy,' etc.

"84, l. 20, 'paide his debt unto nature.'
Page 87, l. 16, 'love is above King and Keiser':
  l. 22, 'forced love is neuer sweete.'

  88, l. 26, 'we are only overcom not vanquished.'

  101, l. 2, 'the Swan sings melodiously before death.'

  103, l. 19, 'To learning and law, ther's no greater foe,' etc.

  116, ll. 27-8, 'stoode like a trewant,' etc.

  122, l. 7, 'Short tale to make.'

  124, l. 8, 'mony now a daies make the match,' etc.

  126, l. 23, 'I con you little thanke.'

  130, l. 26, 'pittie it is men of learning should live in lacke.'

  135, l. 7, 'brag his creditors carried stones.'

  143, l. 17, 'stop shallow water,' etc.; 'tread on a worme,' etc.

  155, l. 16, 'purest glass is the most bricke, the finest Lawne the soonest staind, the highest Oake most subject to the wind, and the quickest wit the more easily woone to folly.'

  158, l. 1, 'such as clime hastely fall sodainely';
  l. 9, 'the blacke Oxe hath trod on their feeete,' and cf. p. 271, l. 1: l. 11, 'they sigh out had I wist,' etc.

  159, l. 5, 'once got into the boane it will step into the flesh.'

  163, l. 5, 'I did with the Dog,' etc.

  171, l. 17, 'as early pricks the tree that will prove a thorne,' etc.

  177, l. 10, 'I left her at six or seuen.'

  179, l. 14, 'so long the Pot,' etc.
NOTES AND ILLUSTRATIONS.

Page 195, l. 14, 'Pouertie is the father of innumerable infirmities.'

" 211, l. 10, 'sorrowes concealed are the more sower;' etc.: l. 19, 'thou wilt not bewray it to thy shirt': l. 27, 'I tooke heart at grasse.'

" 212, l. 13, 'I will set fire on the straw': l. 22, 'as blind Baiard,' etc.

" 213, l. 21, 'stopt with a Bakers batch.'

" 214, l. 27, 'sundry men, sundry conceits.'

" 225, l. 20, 'put Flaxe and Fire together;' etc.

" 229, l. 12, 'looke ouer the pale like a Buck in season.'

" 246, l. 20, 'he being blinde, had eaten the flie.'

" 248, l. 27, 'blam'd, but neuer sham'd.'

" 255, l. 11, 'fier in the strawe.'

" 257, l. 3, 'where no hedge is, there the goods are spoiled,' etc.: l. 10, 'If she bee wanton,' etc.

" 260, l. 24, 'a colde comforte.'

" 261, l. 26, 'the greatest wonder lasteth but nine dayes.'

" 265, l. 4, 'come at every lure': l. 7, 'aske counsaile of your pillow': l. 15, 'ouer the shoes in wante.'

" 266, l. 4, 'go seeke suche Lettice,' etc.

" 273, l. 14, 'what my tongue speakeh, my heart thinketh.'

A. B. G.

END OF VOL. XII.